

# **OUTDOOR RECREATION AND LEISURE PATTERNS IN SAUDI ARABIA**

**AND THEIR ROLES IN DETERMINING  
OPEN SPACE PLANNING AND DESIGN:**

**THE CASE OF  
JEDDAH'S CORNICHE**

A thesis submitted to the University of Sheffield in Candidature for  
the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Landscape Architecture

by

**TALAL HASSAN HAMMADI**  
MLA (University of Pennsylvania)  
BSc (King Abdulaziz University)

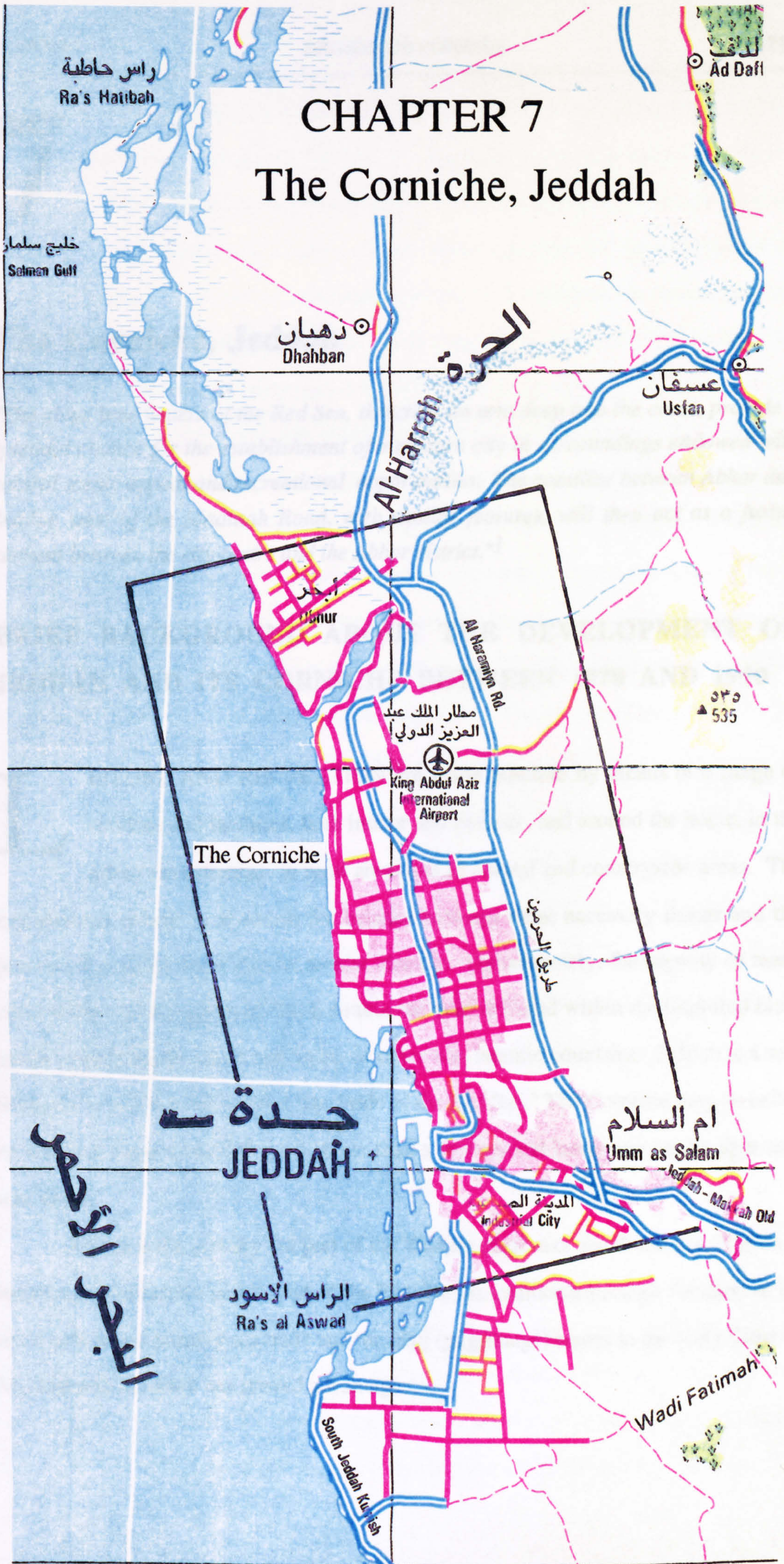
Architectural Studies  
Department of Landscape  
University of Sheffield

Volume 2

April, 1993

# CHAPTER 7

## The Corniche, Jeddah



# 7

## The Corniche, Jeddah

*"The clear blue waters of the Red Sea, thrusting an arm deep into the coast, provide a splendid chance for the establishment of a modern city in surroundings endowed with natural scenic appeal and recreational opportunities. The coastline between Abhor and Jeddah west of the Madinah Road, with similar features, will then act as a fusing element between the city centre and the Abhor district."<sup>1</sup>*

### BRIEF BACKGROUND ABOUT THE DEVELOPMENT OF JEDDAH AND ITS CORNICHE BETWEEN 1970 AND 1990

**L**EISURE AND RECREATION are made possible by means of a range of services and facilities, both indoor and outdoor, and around the home, in the urban environment, in rural areas and in coastal and countryside areas. The key element is how to maintain the balance between those necessary things and the preservation of the local environmental identity. Unfortunately, the identity of many cities within the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia has been diffused within the imported blue-prints containing the ideas and styles of other non-Islamic countries. Jeddah is a sea-front city which has been called "the Pride of the Red Sea." The Corniche may be called its *make-up* since a beautification rather than a recreational landscape design approach was taken.

Jeddah is the primary sea port of the Western Region of Saudi Arabia. Due to its location on the eastern middle part of the Red Sea, its traditional strategic function as the main gate to the primary sea trade and the *Hajj* (pilgrimage) routes to the Holy Cities of Makkah and Madinah has proved advantageous.

The development of Jeddah from 1970 to 1990 was in response to the burgeoning urban population. Jeddah continued to grow as a major city in the Kingdom. Its growth progressed at a more controlled pace than earlier though at some stages it was both rapid and massive. Many urban activities and projects spread all through the city which made it essential to prepare a comprehensive master plan for Jeddah within an overall regional development programme. Around 1970 the Ministry of Interior, Department of Municipal Affairs (nowadays the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs MOMRA) appointed *Robert Matthew, John-Marshall and Partners* (RMJM&P), a British consultant, to prepare a master plan for the city. The rise of the oil price in 1973 had an immense impact not only on the development of Jeddah but also the whole country. Jeddah experienced a massive building and outdoor construction boom which altered all the planning aspects of the urban fabric. In the absence of effective landscape planning and design regulations for development control, there was uncontrolled urban expansion. The city lacked essential planning data. Therefore RMJM&P conducted major surveys to collect data and information to analyse the situation and to forecast the future city growth up to 1991.<sup>2</sup> The first integrative master plan was finished by 1976. This included a transportation network, land uses, building heights and population densities. The application and execution of this plan encountered several difficulties. Among these were the scale at which the study prepared (1:10,000). This imposed difficulties in plan implementation and necessitated the preparation of more detailed area plans. Also, by the time the detailed action area plans were finished and carried out, the base mapping and the survey data were already out of date.<sup>3</sup>

As part of the Master Plan studies, the population of Jeddah was established at 381,000 in 1971. The consultants estimated that urban growth over the 1971-1991 Plan period could reach 1,650,000 by the end of 1991 with a *high growth rate* and the Master Plan was prepared on that basis. It was approved by the High committee for planning in 1973.<sup>4</sup> The first stage of the project was to prepare and update the 1971 aerial photographs and mapping and to carry out a marine survey of the coastline including the coral reefs. The master plan aimed at providing an integrated land use and transportation structure capable of accommodating different rates of growth. The

consultants also aimed at spelling out the public utility service requirements, as well as standards for the provision of schools, clinics, hospitals and outdoor recreational open spaces. One of the objectives was to provide sufficient religious, educational, medical, administrative and recreational facilities to meet the needs of the population. The provision of open spaces and recreational areas was one facility to be provided at two levels, namely the local recreational spaces within the communities, and the major recreational spaces at the city level. The municipality has described its efforts to provide public spaces inside communities, as follows.

*"As for areas that could be used as public spaces, these are only empty pieces of land lying between buildings in different parts of the city where children can play. Except that the gradual, but continuous building in these areas is reducing the possibilities of using them as parks, as due to the growth in the city, these areas are considered to be a fortune. As for open air areas surrounding the city, they are areas along roads, and scattered public gardens that Municipality has planted, built shades, seats and provided water."<sup>5</sup>*

In 1977, the municipality dismissed the RMJM&P and appointed *Sert-Jackson International/Saudi consult* (SJI) to review the city growth and evaluate and update the existing master plan and to continue providing a solid base for city growth and development. The most extensive developments took place to the north, with others to the east and the south. New land subdivisions emerged with more geometric grid pattern shapes. These plans also lacked the detailed action area plans which resulted in several residential communities having no adequate green and open spaces. The objectives were confined mainly to laying down planning regulations for streets, housing and traffic only. In other words, the main planning objective was to lay out a *skeleton of side pavements* with lights before implementing other city infrastructures.

By 1980, the municipality dismissed SJI and appointed a new consultant called *Sumaitt* to prepare the detailed studies and plans for different action areas within the city. The continual change of planning consultants added to the difficulties faced by the city as a result of the rapid development. "The very rapid rate of urban growth from basically a walled city of approximately 40,000 in 1367 AH (1947 AD) to a city of over

a million in 1410 AH (1989 AD) makes it necessary for the urban populace to develop ways of life adapted to and in harmony with the size of the new city and the rapid changes which have taken place and which will continue to take place in the future."<sup>6</sup> The master plan preparations and studies could not keep up with the growth rate of the city. The master plan required continual updating. Data collection methods were different from one consultant to another, which also resulted in dissimilarities in the presented data. This created several problems related to the integration of the services and facilities of different departments, not only at the city level but also at the regional level.<sup>7</sup>

The master plan aimed at providing an integrated land use, outdoor recreational areas and transportation structure capable of accommodating city growth and demands. The RMJM&P master plan mentioned the need for local recreational open spaces within walking distance of all houses. They proposed the provision of one hectare (2.47 acres) per thousand residents for local recreational space, about 10 sq. m. per person. This figure never came to reality for two reasons. The first was the lack of any legislation and the absence of the means to achieve it. Secondly, the rapid development which occurred in the last two decades attracted attention towards the housing and transportation network. In the analysis of the master plan, RMJM&P failed to emphasise the importance of local small neighbourhood parks and well designed playgrounds <sup>8</sup>

SJI has argued that the provision of adequate open spaces and facilities be given priority at the district and neighbourhood levels, requiring the purchase of private land within the older areas. They also urged that consideration be given to opportunities lying outside city boundaries such as the establishment of a Red Sea National Park. Yet the planning and design criteria dealt mainly with short or set-back standards, sizes, outdated statistical figures, and location without a comprehensive social and physical enquiry based on a sound ecological, biological and environmental study. The present urban pattern lacks adequate open spaces, especially in densely built-up areas where the size and allocation of sites was implemented and designed according to the planting and greening of vacant land using primitive agricultural techniques, without landscape

architectural principles and concepts. It is very important to reserve some of the undeveloped land within communities and to investigate how people might use them. The lack of adequate outdoor recreational areas within the housing units enforce people to visit distant outdoor areas such as Jeddah's Corniche<sup>9</sup>.

## JEDDAH'S SEA-SIDE CORNICHE

**I**T WAS THE TRADITION of Jeddah's people to use the sea for fishing and transportation. Now the coastal area is used for sea-based recreation. The Corniche is the name that has been given to the coastal areas. It is a linear Red Sea's coastal park which runs more than 80 km. along the western part of the urban fabric. Corniche is a French word meaning "an ornamental border at the top edge of the front of a building or pillar or round the top inside edges of the walls in a room." The second meaning is "a mass of snow, ice, rocks, etc., hanging over the edge of a cliff, roof, etc., and seeming likely to fall."<sup>10</sup> The name of the Corniche has been applied to the Corniche originally from Alexandria, Egypt. According to Waller<sup>11</sup> "The moving force behind the Corniche has been Mohammed Saeed Farsi , mayor of Jeddah for the past twelve years. Part of Farsi's education (as an architect) was at Alexandria, Egypt, which also has a Corniche taking the name from the original version in the south of France. The essence of a Corniche is that it is a hard edged man-made promenade dividing land from sea and incorporating attractions for the local population. A developed Corniche is particularly suitable for urban situations where the pressure of population would destroy or degraded the natural edge condition. The Saudis have taken this idea and modified it to suit their own social custom."<sup>12</sup>

These seaside areas were the focus of an integrated recreational project for Jeddah's and nearby cities inhabitants. The project was concerned with the creation of opportunities for strolling and for excursions by families to allow Jeddah's residents to spend their leisure time walking or relaxing.<sup>13</sup> According to Al-Shahrani,<sup>14</sup> and after the completion of the studies for the Corniche, the municipality found that the initial cost of implementing the project was too high and could not justified to the higher

authorities. The mayor was convinced of the need for the project and wished to prove its importance, so he commenced work on a small segment about 7 kilometres in front of the Hamra Palace (Old Hamra in the central Corniche). The work was funded by donations from the people of Jeddah. This succeeded in convincing the higher authorities which resulted in evolved planning concepts and design approaches on the site. In an interview, the mayor of Jeddah explaining the Corniche he said:

*" . . . then, all of us noticed that the completion of this lively project by the method of the direct planning and implementation, according to the spontaneous conditions which faced the plan, resulted in the best outcome by reducing the general cost and in executing the project in the shortest possible time avoiding studies and different alternatives. This was done under my direct personal supervision."<sup>15</sup>*

In implementing the Corniche project, the municipality applied two planning principles. Firstly, the application of the principle that the straight line is the shortest line between any two points. However this line is not always the most beautiful or appropriate line. According to the mayor of Jeddah he argues in defining the road track (alignment of the road) it should pass by different water depths along the beach in order to display the different water colours. And secondly, to plan the Corniche by an independent character that each site was determined by the special sculptures and different features. So there are areas of sand where children's play equipment is installed; these areas planted with trees and palms; there is a dual road, each side at a different level with sitting areas for families; and there are open areas beautified by sculptures by famous artists.<sup>16</sup> From a landscape architectural point of view, the Corniche was designed according to primitive and poor planning and landscape architectural approach, because each area must be planned and designed according to the principles of environmental design and people's needs. The layout pattern, the relationships with the surroundings, space articulation, organisation, order, hierarchies and the three-dimensional physical and spatial structures are all missing components in Jeddah's Corniche. Accessibility and the design should accommodate people's way of



life in first place, then traffic circulation comes to facilitate people's movements in the second.

In the beginning of the 1970s, the Corniche had been developed to enhance, beautify and reclaim the deteriorated coastal areas of Jeddah, which had been "used as rubbish-dumping areas with random car parking taking up the empty spaces adjoining the sea edges."<sup>17</sup> The RMJM&P was appointed to prepare a master plan (Figure 7.1) to carry out a detailed study of the entire coastline, this was to be a part of the overall development and beautification of the City of Jeddah. The first studies for the Corniche started in 1975.

Examining the overall conception it is evident that the Corniche had been planned as a recreational traffic road with pavements and some open spaces incorporated for public use. It was constructed as hard edged ordinary sidewalk pavements, with some trees, often planted in the middle, and seats in straight lines along the pavements. In various locations, there are some basic areas which are devoted to swimming (regardless to gender differences), boating, fishing and picnicking pursuits, with various amenities for relaxation, enjoyment and passive and active excursions.

Waller<sup>18</sup> notes that the Corniche is the most important leisure facility in Jeddah and attracts visitors from a large nearby area including Makkah Al-Mukarramah and city of Taif. It is a major large open space, where people enjoy leisure time. It attracts people due to its tradition. "Traditionally in Saudi Society, large open spaces were more attractive, especially for families. They used to picnic in the desert, the natural areas and along the beaches. The main reason for locating themselves away from other groups was due to their needs for shade and privacy."<sup>19</sup> They achieved privacy through stationing themselves away from visual contact distance from each other. The Corniche can be also described as carriageways divided by lagoons with sculptured roundabouts at intersections. Sometimes the sea edge is formed by igneous rocks transported from other nearby areas. In other places, areas of sand have been introduced and swings provided to encourage children's play. Its main construction element is narrow tiled pavements (Figure 7.2).





**FIGURE 7.2** *The main characteristics of the Jeddah Corniche: pavements, lack of plants, absence of shade, traffic and overall landscape patterns<sup>21</sup>*

According to *Al-Riyadh*, the daily newspaper,<sup>22</sup> the Corniche of Jeddah is the only outdoor recreational centre for the citizens to spend their festival times (*Aids*), as well as the only outdoor recreational refuge for the residents, for outings, and for spending leisure time and for all types of sea-based leisure time activities.

The overall pattern of the Corniche's coastline is not continued along the sea edge for the whole of its distance because it frequently has to turn inland to avoid important sea edge land uses such as the desalination plant, the King's palace, and some military structures. These diversions cause the Corniche to be divided up into three sections. These are the Southern Sea front (South Corniche), the Central Sea front Corniche, and the North Corniche which includes Shorm Abhor (Abhor Creek).

The three zones, extending from south of the Black Cape Peninsula (*Al-Ra's al Aswad*) to the area called Salman Gulf north of *Shorm Abhor* (Abhor Creek) constitute together the whole of Jeddah's Corniche as a series of similar recreational areas for public use to provide them with recreational facilities such as picnicking, sport, swimming and play areas. Various recreational pursuits may take place in any of the public open spaces of the three parts of the Corniche. The three parts are as follows (Figure 7.3).

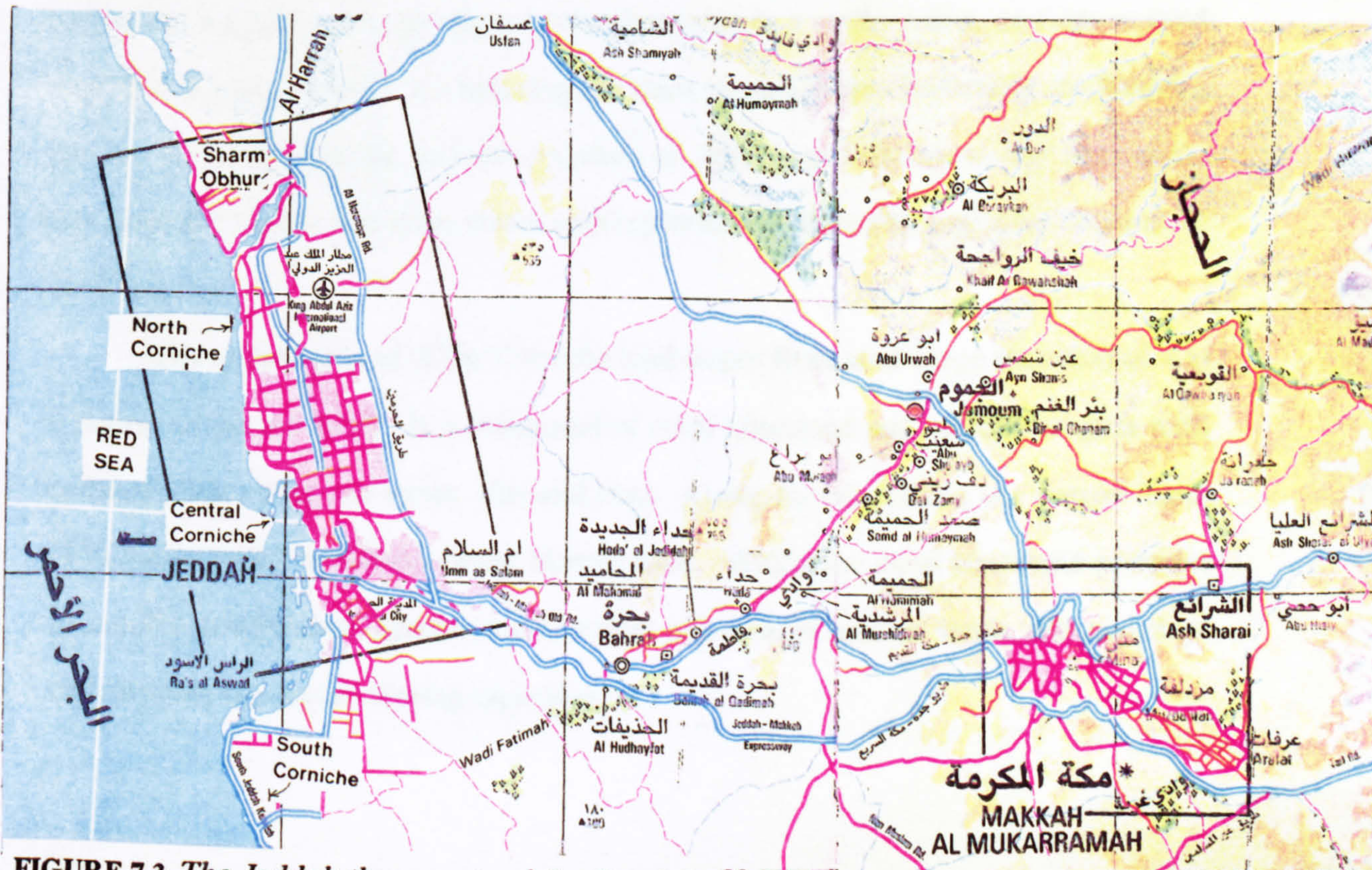


FIGURE 7.3 The Jeddah three parts of the Corniche 23

The reader might know that all of the Corniche's three sections were used the same design and layout techniques; the only things that distinguish the three sections of the Corniche, as mentioned earlier, are the way it frequently turns inland or away to avoid important sea edge land uses. Therefore the discussion and description of the Corniche is, to a large extent, applicable to all Jeddah's Corniche.

## THE MAIN PHYSIOGRAPHIC FEATURES OF THE CORNICHE

**T**HE CORNICHE is situated in the Eastern Coastal Plain of the Red Sea (*Tihamah*). The main geology of the coast is sediments which are made up of a clay and sand mixed with shell-debris. The sand is of an igneous origin (quartz-feldspar), although the dark grey clay may be of organic origin or it may result from the breakdown and erosion of the basalt present at the source of certain Wadis (*Wadi Umm as Salam, Wadi Bani Malik and Wadi Fatimah*). According to the engineering geological map on ground conditions in Jeddah,<sup>24</sup> the main soil type of Jeddah's Corniche consists of "muddy sand mixed with shell debris, slightly indurated detrital limestone or fragments and blocks of coral limestone in a sandy matrix, and coarse sand with brown silt." Figure 7.4 illustrating the main physiographic features of the Western Region of Saudi Arabia, and the location of Jeddah in relation to the immediate topographic features and cities which also represent the main physiographic features of the Corniche.

The natural ground of the Corniche land slopes from an average elevation of 4 to 6 metres to the sea level. It is composed of coral limestone and calcareous grits with isolated areas of marine sands, silts and clay. Along the coast there is a narrow bank (150 metre wide) of aeolian (wind blown) sand. Whilst the coral limestone provides generally good bearing capacity, local cavities and areas of aeolian sands, silts and clays will severely reduce the bearing capacities.

# The Mean Monthly Air Temperature in Jeddah

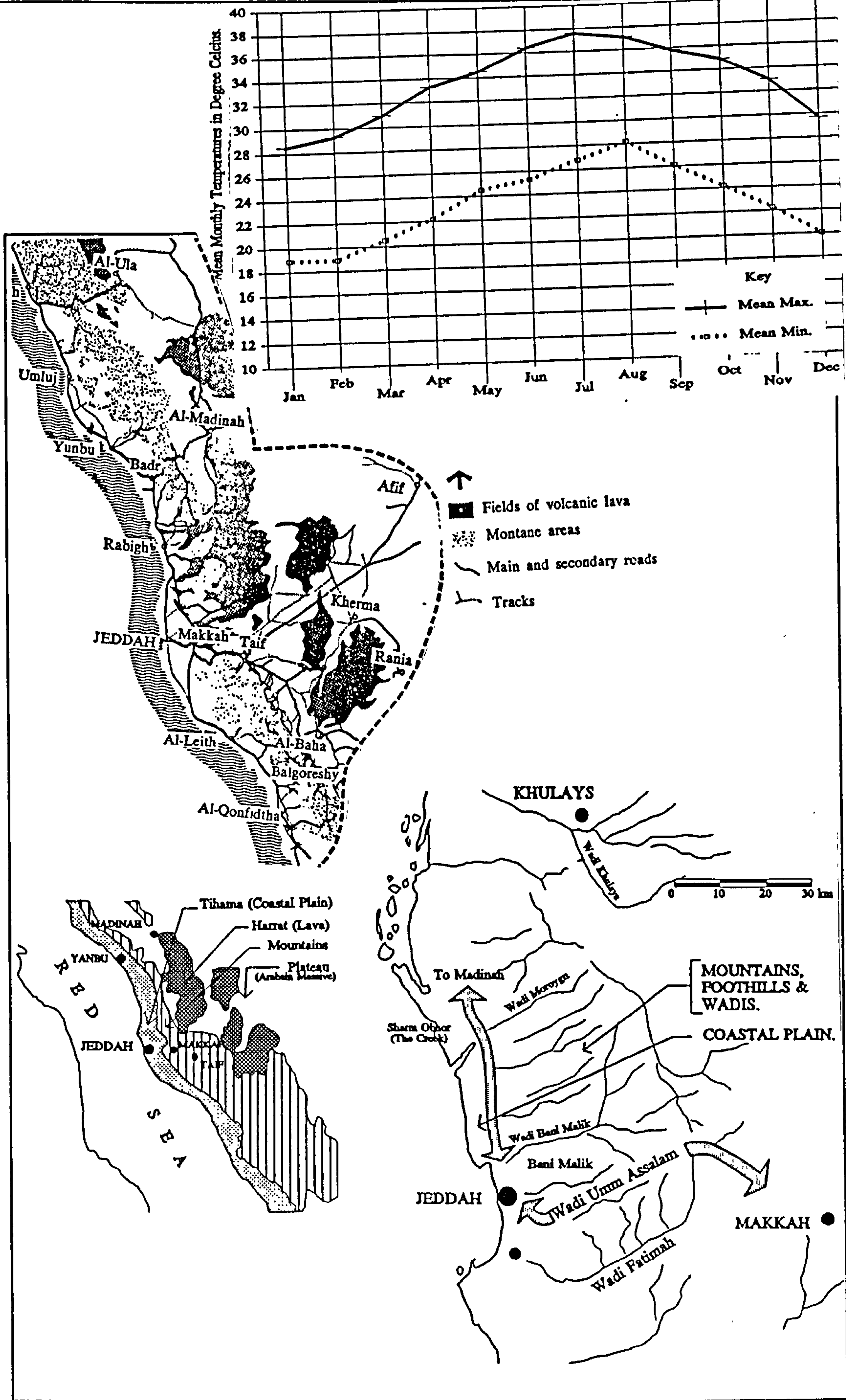


FIGURE 7.4 A map illustrating the physiographic features of the Western Region of Saudi Arabia, and the location of Jeddah in relation to the immediate topographic features and cities.<sup>25</sup>

The water table is continuous and generally 1 to 3 metres below the surface (figure 7.5). The salinity of the ground water is very high. Chloride and sulphate are the main ingredients of the water which must be considered in any public and construction works.

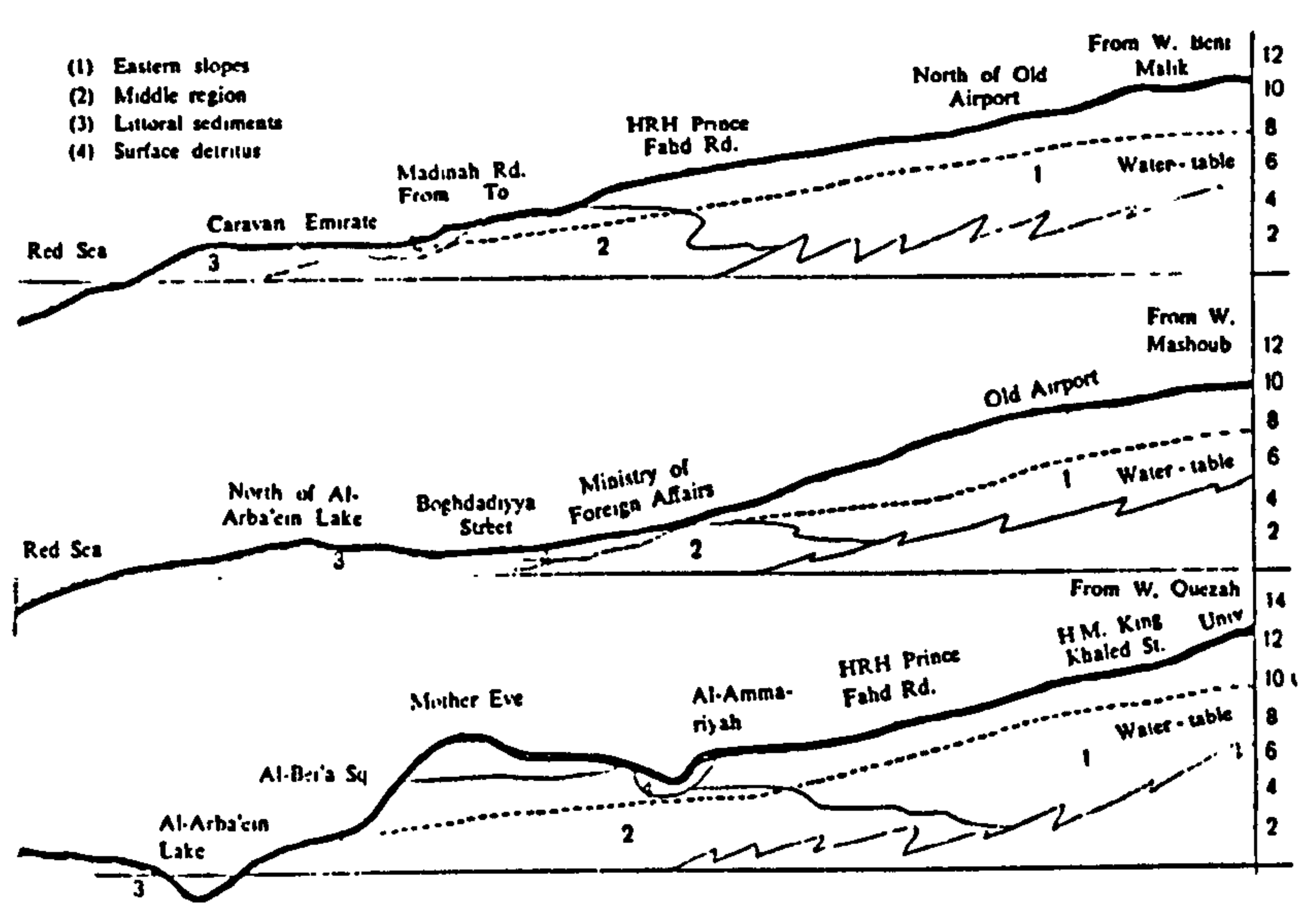


FIGURE 7.5 The level of the water -table in eastern slopes, middle region, littoral sediments and surface detritus.

Water is available from desalination processes. The water distribution network in Jeddah covers almost the whole area of 52397 ha. (129,375 acres = 472 km<sup>2</sup>), including some parts of the northern Corniche by 1990<sup>26</sup>. The total area of the North Corniche is over 2,000 hectares (4942 acres) i.e. 4% of the total Jeddah's area, and extends from the out fall of the northern storm water channel (northern boundary of the Central Urban District) along the edge of the sea to the Old Palace and includes the whole of Shorm Abhor.<sup>27</sup>

On the landward side of the Corniche road hotels and high rise buildings are springing up to take advantage of the sea view and Corniche facilities. Sculptures are very prominent and often concentrated. The main idea of a sculpture is to give identity to the place, and to form an outdoor museum. There are more than 294 sculptures on the Corniche.<sup>28</sup> Some represent religious values such as verses from the Holy Qura'n in

various forms. Others represent the Saudi's heritage, such as the Coffee pot. "It is not surprising to discover that Jeddah is considered by experts to be one of the world's foremost centres of modern and industrial outdoor sculptures."<sup>29</sup> Most, if not all of these sculptures were donated to the city by individuals or companies but the Municipality provides the land for the location of each sculpture and in some cases contributes towards the cost (Figure 7.6).



FIGURE 7.6 The main sculptures of Jeddah's Corniche. There must be a balance between soft and hard landscape elements.



## THE SOUTH CORNICHE

**T**HE SOUTH CORNICHE extends about 25 km, from the central urban area to *Al-Shoiba* on the southernmost part where there are rich coral beaches and sand dunes. A tremendous amount of land and sea water has been reclaimed, levelled, paved and asphalted. Several projects have been assigned to be built around the *Ra's al Aswad* peninsula including chalets, camping sites, playgrounds and sports areas, restaurants, cafeterias, greenery, lighting and public services. Those projects took advantage of the presence of natural lakes and the banks were designed for recreation, such as sports grounds, restaurants, beach cabins, camping sites, and coffee shops.

According to the Municipality, the favourite spot for recreation on this area is around the peninsular of *Al-Ras Al-Aswad*. Building a good road to it will make it much easier for many people to reach. Also building some sea-based recreational open spaces and providing them with water, will provide Jeddah with other facilities complementary to Shorm Abhor. The south Corniche has an area with access to future recreational centres, restaurants and cafes with car parks and other entertainment services. According to Al-Farsi,<sup>30</sup> the recreational projects were started nearly 5 years ago, and most of the required work is completed. The levelling, landfill, paving and asphaltting of the roads are in an advanced stage of completion.

In future, several projects will be carried out around the *Al-Ras al-Aswad* peninsula, including beach cabins, camping sites provided with fresh water and all tourist facilities. Facilities will be offered for clubs and sport activities such as football, mini-basket-ball, baseball and handball playgrounds. Modern lighting and complete service facilities will also be supplied.

## THE CENTRAL CORNICHE

**T**HE CENTRAL CORNICHE contains a developed land which is an extension of the Central Urban Area (figure 7.7) up to the entrance to the Raytheon Military Area. Considerable land reclamation was undertaken along the northern shoreline of *Ghubbat Asharah*. The Raytheon peninsula, including the military training school and the desalination plant, is a security area and has been excluded from this study due to the difficulty of obtaining the necessary information.

The area from Raytheon Point to the mouth of Shorm Abhor, along the coast is flat with minor variation of 1 to 2 metres. Along the coastline there are narrow strips of holiday villas, cabins or privately *acre size* luxurious walled palace areas. A small proportion of this coast has low undercut cliffs (1 - 2 metres high) but for the most part the land slopes gently into the sea.



**FIGURE 7.7** Part of the Central Corniche where people park cars along the kerb side and sit on the pavement. They overlook the sea and children's playground.

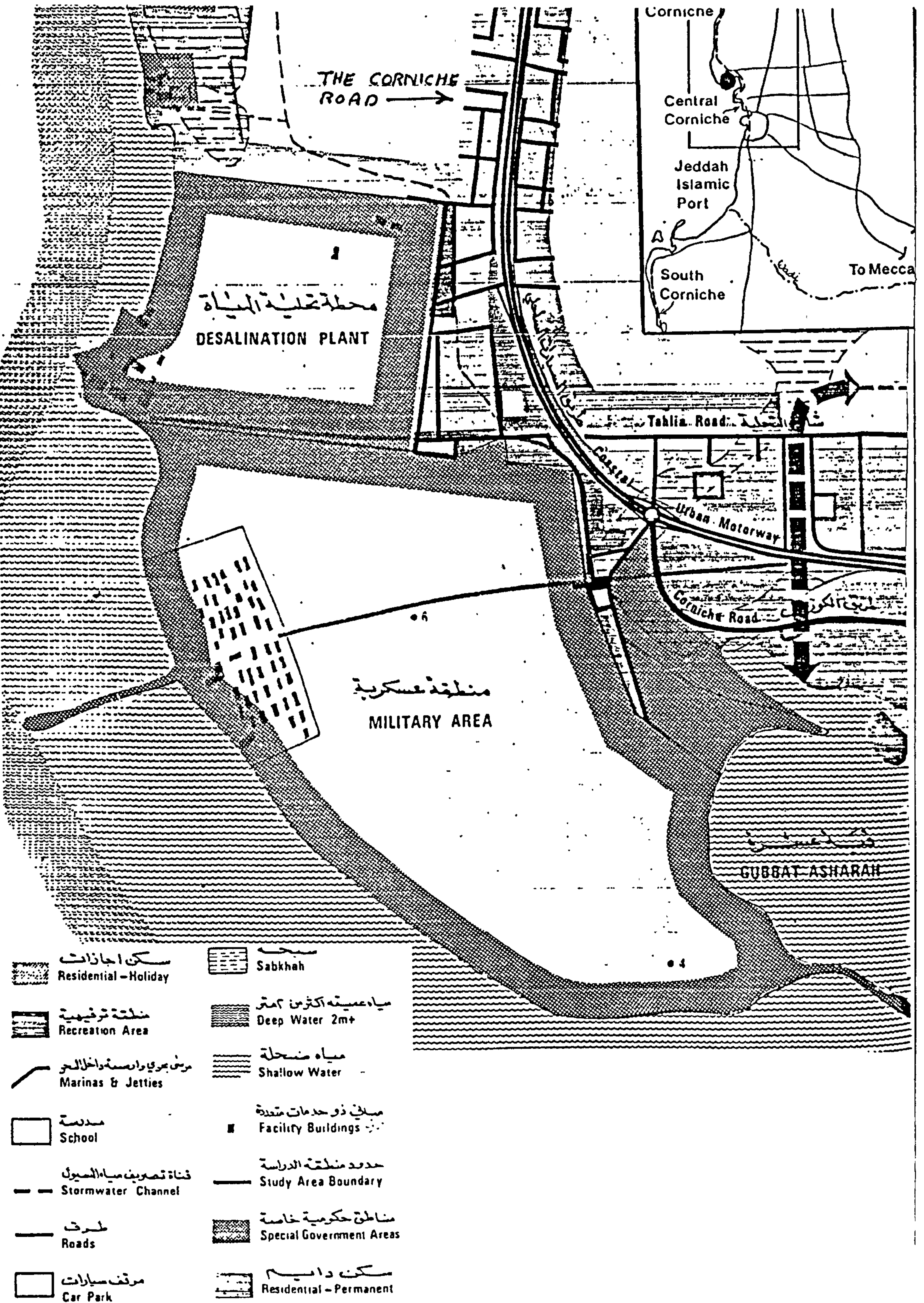
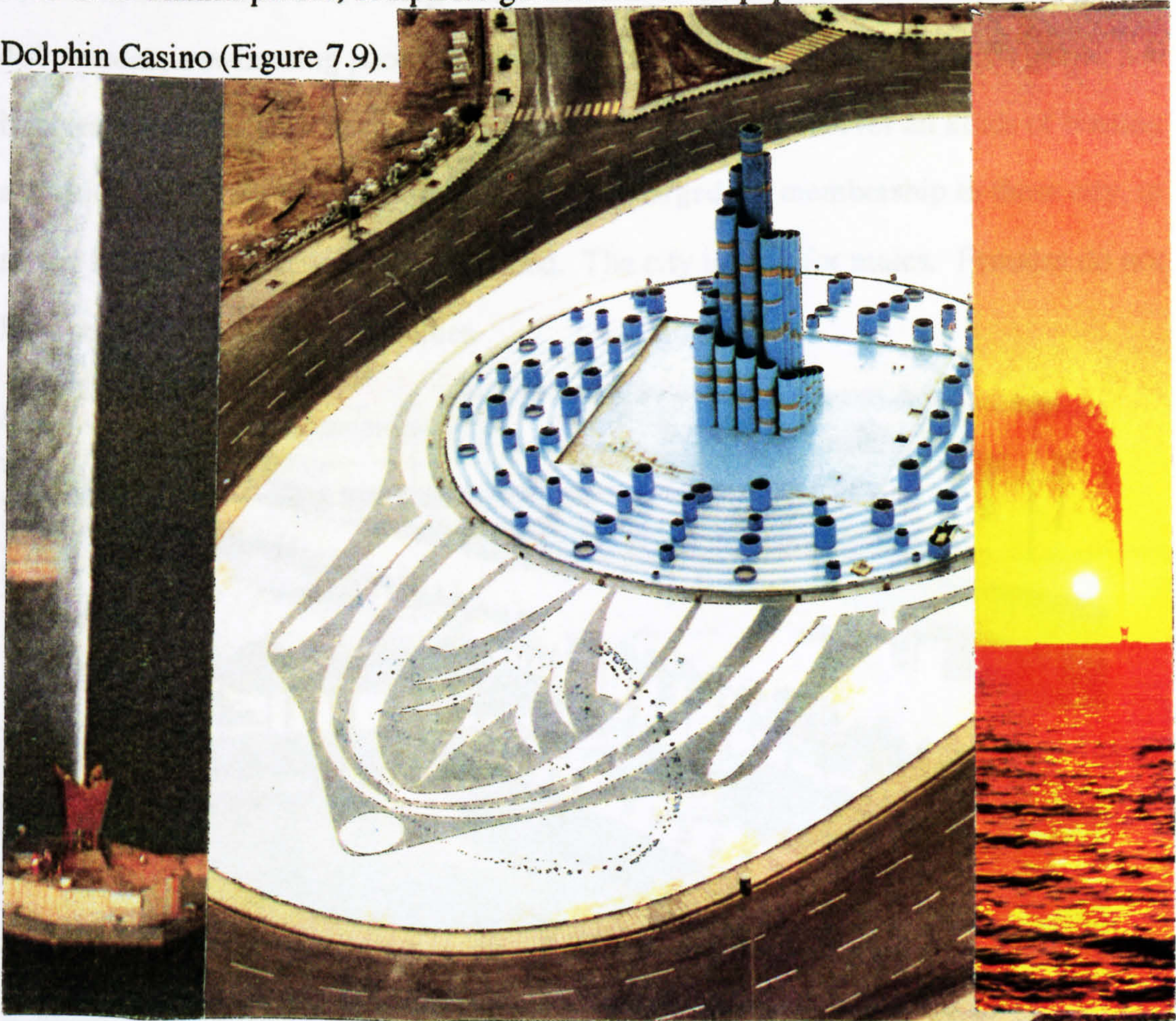


FIGURE 7.8 Plan shows a segment of the southern part of the Central Corniche.

There are other important features within the Central Corniche. These include a sculpture resembling blue organ pipes at the end of Tahlia street which gives new identity to that area. There are more swings and a very huge fountain has been Aligned with the end of the street, it is a water jet in the sea emerging from the base in the form of an incense burner. This is a magnificent eye catcher and visually links the sea with the built up areas. It has been said that it is the largest fountain in the Middle-East, if not the whole world. Its water jet reaches 261 metres, the equivalent of a 90 story building. The water jet is supplied by three large water pumps with 4000 cubic metre of sea water at a speed of 320 km/hour.<sup>31</sup> Some of these magnificent sculptures may catch drivers' eyes and could cause accidents. These focal points must be designed for pedestrian visitors, not for drivers. The Central Corniche also includes some important features such as al-Hamra palace, sculptural garden and some popular restaurants such as the Dolphin Casino (Figure 7.9).



**FIGURE 7.9** There are other important features within the Central Corniche such as the sculpture resembling blue organ pipes at the end of Tahlia street -which gives new identity to that area- and swings, and a water jet has been aligned with the end of the street, the jet emerging from the base of an incense burner.

The function of these areas involve the integrated recreational projects, for instance, the extensive expanse of water in Arruways Bay with its potential to be a centre and sailing boats' club. That will include quays for boat-owners and a dry-dock for the maintenance of their boats. "The area will be improved and beautified with enough room for restaurant, cafes, car parks and other amenities that would make it easy for the families to enjoy themselves especially that the area is close to the city centre and the residential parts of the city."<sup>32</sup> It was constructed by the General Presidency for Youth Welfare. This project is entitled "King Fahad Coastal City". The coastal city in Jeddah (figure 7.10) is located at Al-Hamra beach (Central Corniche). The coastal city contains the most modern facilities to provide comfort and enjoyment for their visitors. The facilities include indoor courts for basketball, volleyball, handball, tennis and squash in addition to a wrestling arena. Also there is a theatre to accommodate up to 460 persons, a swimming pool and open-air courts. There are areas for light games and hobbies, cafeterias and first-class restaurants as well as a marina for all kinds of boating activities and competitions. A nominal fee is charged for membership to these city, in return for which all services are provided. The city is only for males. Females do not have such recreational opportunities.



**FIGURE 7.10** *A coastal city for young males in the central Corniche*<sup>33</sup>

## THE NORTH CORNICHE

**T**HE NORTH CORNICHE zone is almost twice the length of the southern Corniche reaching approximately 58 km from the city centre right up to *Salman* Bay, north of Shorm Abhor (Abhor Creek). It includes the sea-front of the city centre, Al-Arba'ein Lake, Arruways Area (the old harbour) and the peninsula by the Guest Palace at Al-Hamra. It then proceeds northwards along the coast-line. Figure 7.11 shows a plan of a segment of the northern Corniche (Shorm Abhor).



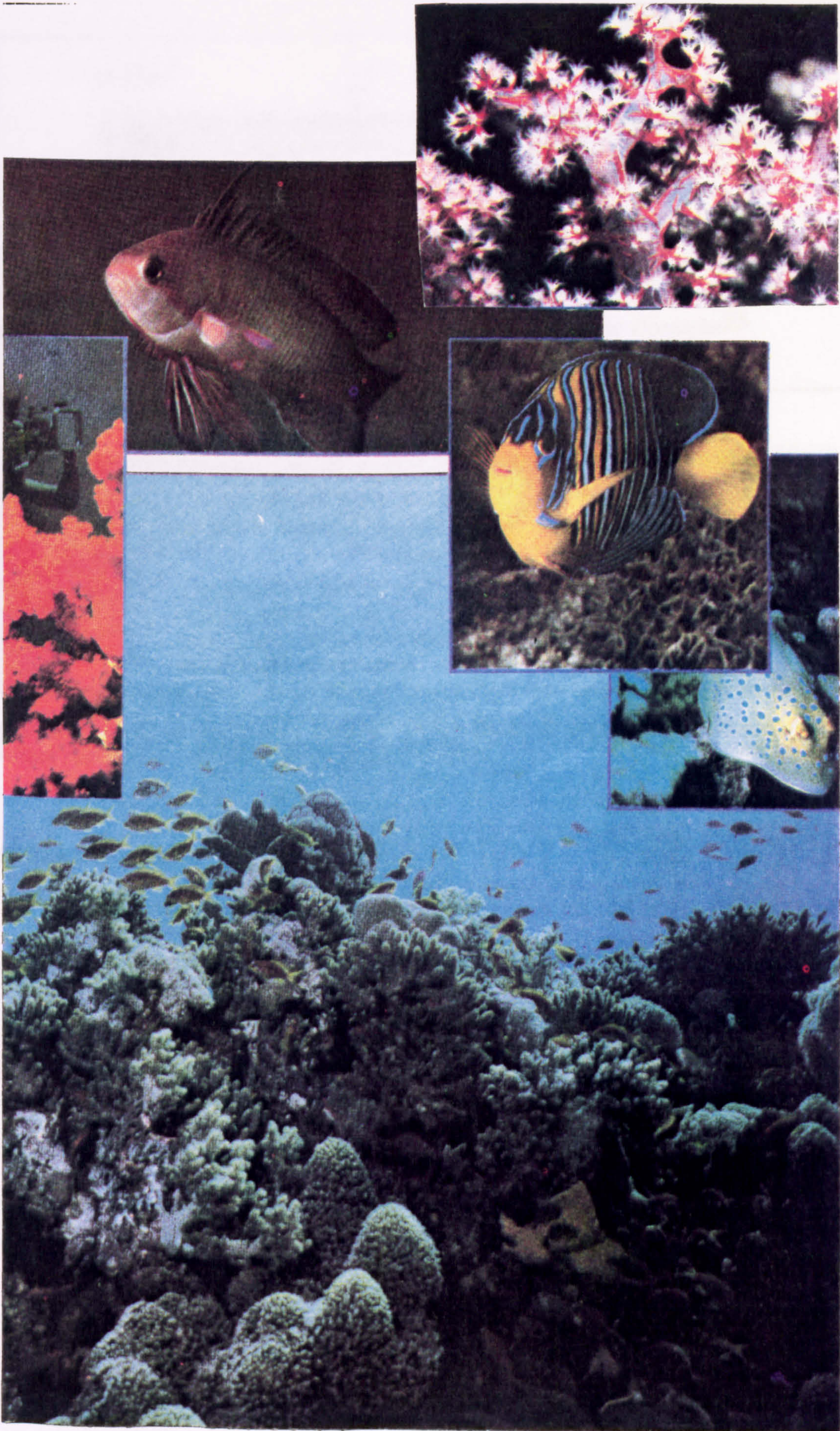
**FIGURE 7.11** A plan of a segment of the northern Corniche (Shorm Abhor) shows road and outdoor recreational sites.<sup>34</sup>

The fringing coral reef varies in width from 150 metres in the south to an average width of 360 metres further north. The water over this fringing reef is very shallow averaging about 0.3 metres deep, although there are isolated patches where the water depth increases to 0.5-0.6 metres. The surface of the fringing reef consists generally of a fairly level surface of limestone with small isolated patches of live coral. At the water's edge, the surface is thinly covered with a muddy sand.

At the seaward edge of the fringing reef the coral growth is both vigorous and magnificent (figure 7.12) and almost the vertical seaward edge of the reef is the home of a wide range of beautiful fish. The vigorous coral growth extends over the vertical face to a depth of approximately 10-15 meters from where a sandy floor descends to greater depth (figure 7.13).

However, there are also some dangerous coastal areas that can be described as 'unpredictable sudden cavities.' Some of these depressions can cause drowning. The following figure 7.14 illustrates the dangers.

The development of the North Corniche area includes easing the access to the water line, cleaning the beach and clearing the shallow water of refuse and stones. This area mainly provides an opportunity to enjoy its attractions. It contrasts with south of the Corniche where it is provided with fun fairs, coffee houses and restaurants that are erected everywhere.



**FIGURE 7.12** *In Jeddah's Corniche the coral growth is both vigorous and magnificent*



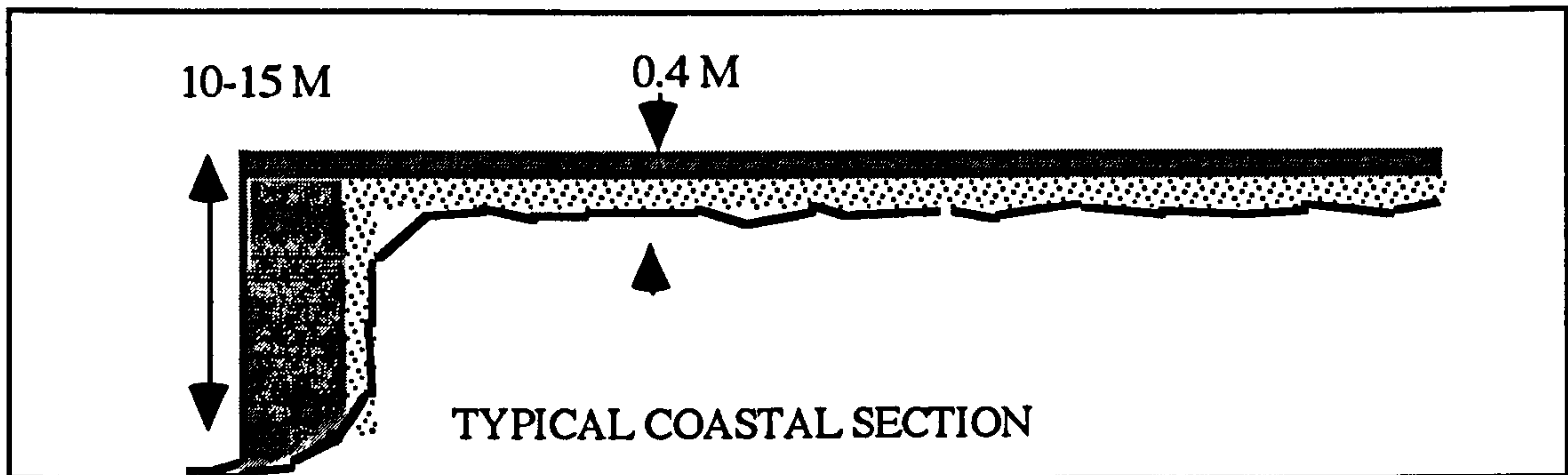


FIGURE 7.13 *Diagrammatic section through fringing reef of the Corniche<sup>35</sup>*

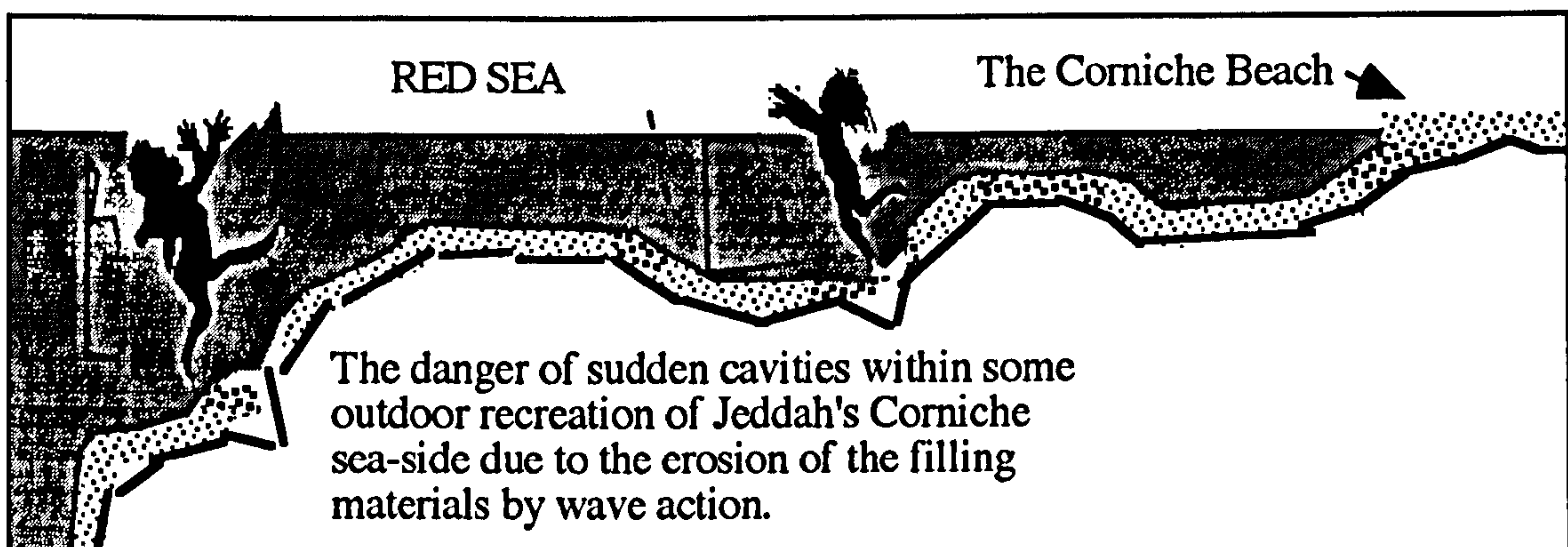


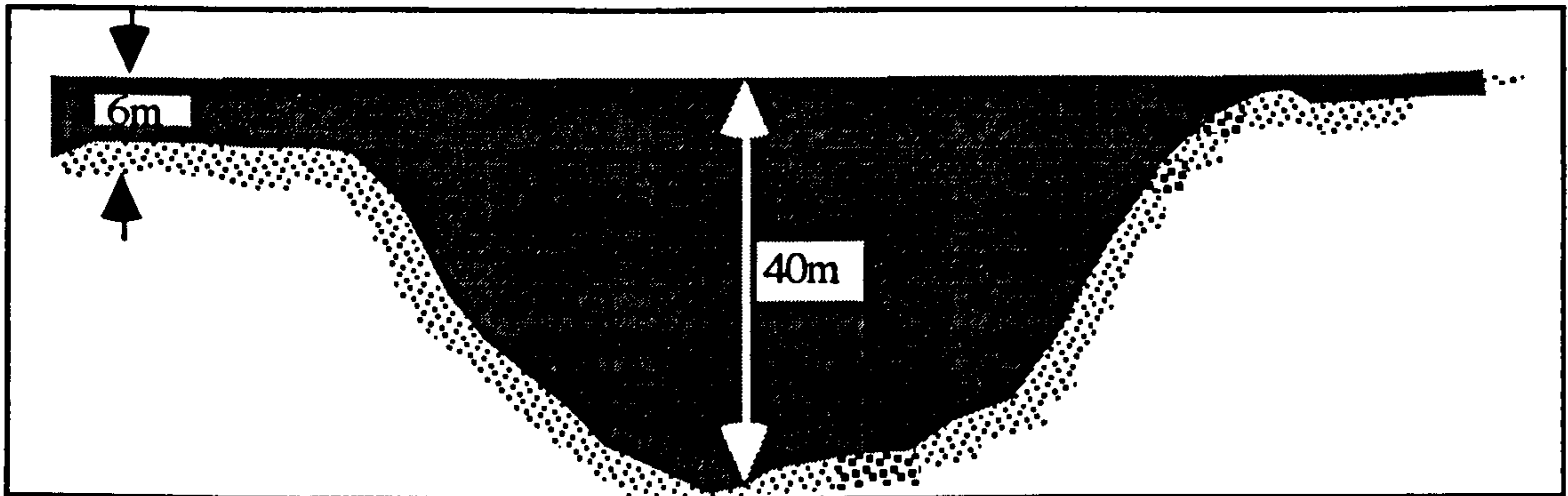
FIGURE 7.14 *Some beaches of Jeddah's Corniche are dangerous due to some cavities which result from erosion caused by wave action.*

## SHORM ABHOR

**S**HORM ABHOR (Abhor Creek or inlet) is the outstanding part of the North Corniche. It is the remarkable front for recreational facilities in the city of Jeddah. It is the only near and available natural beach left for the public. That is because of the developing of the whole north of the Cornish area into either paved areas for passive recreational use or private walled in areas. It is an accessible coastal sand beach where people can touch the sea water. The urban development in the area of the beach has been very restricted to protect the environment of the coast.

Shorm Abhor inlet contains an area of approximately 1773 acres (718 hectares) of sheltered water. The north and south sides of the inlet slope gently to a depth of 6 metres. The sheltered waters and the gently sloping shores make the area relatively suitable for swimming. However there are some hidden cliffs and holes which need to

be identified to protect users from danger. The centre of the creek has an average depth of between 30-45 metres (figure 7.15). However, at the eastern end of the inlet the channel shelves to only 11 metres depth.



**FIGURE 7.15** *Typical section through Shorm Abhor*

It has been observed, by the author, that there are some villas, cabins, beach hotels and chalets which are located along the beaches on both sides of the creek. The existing planning and design produces physical and visual problems. In the early 1970s, large parts of Shorm Abhor was obstructed and walled-in privately, the beach was almost inaccessible, either physically or visually. Kendeel, a poet, complained and said it in a poem said

*"we walked on foot and we saw wondrous things never thought of. On the other side of the sea to the north... there were walls obstructing the sea view..., there was not piece of sandy beach where we could enjoyed sitting in the afternoon, nor was there an opening for the people or for the breeze or for direct view towards the sea."* 36

(The translation from Arabic to English made this to sound not like a poem)

Then, Kendeel referred to the beaches of France (Riviera) and Egypt describing the beautiful design where people can enjoy the nature of coasts. He wished to apply something like that to Jeddah. The Municipality opened the south side of the creek for public use but it is too small to accommodate the huge demand for recreation at the sea-side areas. The northern shore of the creek is the more densely developed because the

southern shore, which faces the prevailing NNW wind, tends to collect drifting rubbish. There are also fewer buildings and a greater public access to the southern beach of the creek which make it very popular with the visitors who do not own or are unable to rent accommodation on the northern beach of the Creek. It has been sensed, by the author, that the Municipality selected the best sea-side areas for *private use*, or for *expatriates* compounds leaving the worst areas for public use. The public ought to have priority in the distribution of valuable sand beaches.

That is to say, because the northern part of Shorm Abhor was characterised by its ample natural sandy beaches, best locations and more moderate temperatures, while the southern part is characterised by its very narrow and limited coastal line, and very short seaside areas preserved for public use, the loin share was preserved for 'private use'. Waller<sup>37</sup> notes that the Corniche road continues beyond the northern end of Shorm Abhor. It runs behind private land so the public have no access to the sea for many kilometres. At present the asphalt road continues to the ruins of King Saudi's palace but it is not a sea edge promenade. However, the easy access to the beach from the Madinah Road makes it more convenient for the inhabitants of Jeddah and Makkah to enjoy beach. But the site is less shaded, has bad sanitary conditions, lacks adequate recreational facilities and separate provision for families.

Every weekend the shores and shallow waters are densely populated with visitors sunbathing, swimming or snorkelling. "The Creek is of great importance as a leisure facility because it forms an inland sea controlled at its seaward end by a coast guard station. Within this area many forms of water recreation take place. It is the only place in Jeddah where marina type development is evolving."<sup>38</sup> Because there is considerable competition for water edge uses; a sensible landscape planning and design policy must be established over the south side of the creek, as well as over the Corniche road adjoining the water's edge and the north side of the creek, especially where private chalets are mostly to be found at the water's edge with the main road servicing them from behind.

The Creek's waters are also very crowded with sailing boats, motor boats and water skiers. Whilst the inlet itself is about 10 kilometres long, for about 2 kilometres

from the mouth of the inlet it is particularly busy and considerable conflicts arise between the activities of various sea-based pursuits. It is worth mentioning that there is a danger to swimmers or people who are snorkelling from motor boats, water skiers and sailing boats.<sup>39</sup> In addition, there is no attempt to separate or to control those kind of activities.

From Shorm Abhor to the boundary of the Salman Bay the coastline has an assortment of buildings and vacant plots along its seaward edge and the fringing reef narrows to come within 200 metres of the shore. The cross section of the fringing reef is identical to that south of Shorm Abhor except for some 4 kilometres south from the old palace. The fringing reef widens to 600 metres and contains a deep water lagoon with a depth of some 3-8 metre which is suitable for fishing. At the northern extremity of the zone lies the old ruined palace (King Saudi's Palace), which is very derelict and potentially its structure is in very dangerous state. The Palace was a very attractive structure which needs more landscape design in order to revive its potential for recreational activities. One of the palace's main features is its massive pier which extends some 50 metres into the lagoon.

The tree-beds all along the Corniche are characterised by their poor arrangement, the narrow pavements and branches of trees expose pedestrian to dangers and conflict with automobiles (Figure 7.16). There are several sets of children's play equipment scattered along the Corniche which lack the facilities for parents to guard their children.



**FIGURE 7.16** *The tree-beds all along the Corniche are characterised by their poor arrangement, the narrow pavements and branches of trees expose pedestrians to danger and conflict with automobiles*

## THE CORNICHE DESIGN GOALS

**T**HE DESIGN GOALS as mentioned by various reports from Jeddah's Municipality were concerned, mostly, with providing beauty and attractions in the form of sculptures, monuments, fountains, promenades and boulevard coastal roads, building modern chalets, restaurants, amusements and hotels. Many of the things that have been written about the Corniche were about its beatification and its use as an open-air museum, with its roads which allow people to see the sea and

lagoons from all directions, and the huge and expensive roundabouts with their sculptures that attract the eye. A lot of trees only have the function of providing green elements, regardless to orientation, pattern and the formation of 'outdoor rooms'. In general terms the following design goals were taken from municipal reports and brochures.

- To construct a Coastal Primary Road (Corniche Road) from the northern side of Ghubbat Asharah along the eastern side of the Raytheon Military Area and Desalination Plant and northwards to a point some 10 km. south of Abhor where it then bends eastwards to join Madinah Road.

One might get the impression that the main design goal is to plan a motorway, then to pave the sideways with tiles or asphalted pavements and put trees and benches in the middle. In other words, the coastal primary road was the main spine that facilitated traffic and acted as a branch from which recreational areas, car parks and amusement areas stem, as well as to provide outdoor recreation for the inhabitants of the City of Jeddah. On the other hand, to beautify the sea front of Jeddah, as well as to protect the beaches from the city's expansion.

- To ensure that adequate facilities are provided for all the population to enjoy the sea. Accordingly, the municipality provided areas on the seaside to be accessible to the public from various locations and directions such as from the motor-way of the eastern by-pass
- To beautify the appearance of Jeddah. The Corniche of Jeddah is an example of a project that emphasised beautification rather than providing adequate outdoor recreational areas. As mentioned by Al-Farsi<sup>40</sup> there were five elements to the "Beautification of the City". These are the sea-front (Corniche) project; sylviculture gardens and parks; works of art /sculptures; the fountains; and natural reserves.

Then he said that:

*"When designing the course of the Corniche it was planned to have it running almost parallel to the coast-line following its natural meanders to provide different angles of viewing the reflections of the sun at day time or the moon at night. In several places it was also planned to extend the Corniche to pass by*

*areas of varying depths resulting in different shades in the colour of the sea from the light blue turquoise to the dark blue in deep waters. . . . Certain parts of the Corniche were also designed in two levels for the to and from directions with seats and benches scattered on its sides-close together for the family and at a distance from one another in compliance with our accepted traditions."*

The previous quotation revealed that the Corniche's goal was designed mainly as a traffic coastal promenade route to be used mostly for the pleasure of driving. But what are the children and families to do after they have enjoyed the different views? Where can they pursue their needs for both healthier active and passive recreation? It is not appropriate to allow conservative Muslim families to sit on the sides of roads on pavements and then to ask them to watch the sunset or the various water colours reflected from light sea water or pools. They spend much if not all of their leisure time sitting, chatting, watching and guarding children from the dangers of traffic flow, or sliding from the steep slopes of the physical structures of some over-hanging poorly designed Corniche areas. The goals must be framed around the required use areas. "Having allocated and organised the required use areas, the planner proceeds to develop these into use volumes, each being designed to accommodate and express its predetermined use. . . All spaces acquired their being and character from the elements that contain them. Because each element so used will imbue the space in some degree with its own qualities, it must be well related not only to all other such elements but also to the essential resultant character desired for the space. . . Every line evident in the form or planes has its own abstract design connotation"<sup>41</sup>

## PROBLEMS OF JEDDAH'S CORNICHE

**A**NY SUCCESSFUL PLANNING OR DESIGN of an open space must follow certain procedures and environmental planning theories, principles, and techniques. The process starts by gathering information on the physical, biological and social features of the site, and critically evaluating the site potential and constraints. Goals and objectives are also formulated within the framework of basic landscape architectural and cultural principles, to meet the client's requirements. As mentioned before, the Corniche was planned and designed without proper environmental studies; nor was it designed by well qualified landscape architects. The planning and design of more than 80 km of linear outdoor recreational areas was undertaken without consulting a landscape architect during the initial planing stages. The lack of professional landscape architects resulted in crucial social and physical problems not being solved. Many of these were *hidden social problems*, that is people feel the tension and are bothered as a result of the layout of recreational sites, but no one expresses their feelings and there was no one to evaluate and examine their needs and demands. "The municipality does not have any standards for its recreational services. It has a weak system in choosing sites for providing recreational services, and it lacks a stable planning process for recreational services in the city."<sup>42</sup>

It seems the planning system failed to provide adequate outdoor provision. There is no systematic way of anticipating, predicting, or monitoring changes related to the provision of public and private leisure opportunities. The existing planning process was not capable of responding adequately to the process of change according to the new social values, life-style patterns, technology, legislation, and availability of local resources and was unable to maintain social or physical changes consistent with the principles of local religious and vernacular traditions.

One of the many Corniche problems, for example, is the lack of adequate swimming areas for women and children that maintain the obliged separation between



male and female outdoor recreational areas. Figure 7.17 represents some characteristics of the Corniche which were contradicts the previous intended goals which set out by the municipality.



**FIGURE 7.17** *Many of the layouts of Jeddah's Corniche areas were shaped by meaningless geometrical patterns that were not related to the unity of design, function and purpose. Those patterns were created in these valuable urban open spaces mainly to fill the gaps and vacant lands with anything. Many of those shapes can only be appreciated in a 'birds-eye view'.<sup>43</sup>*

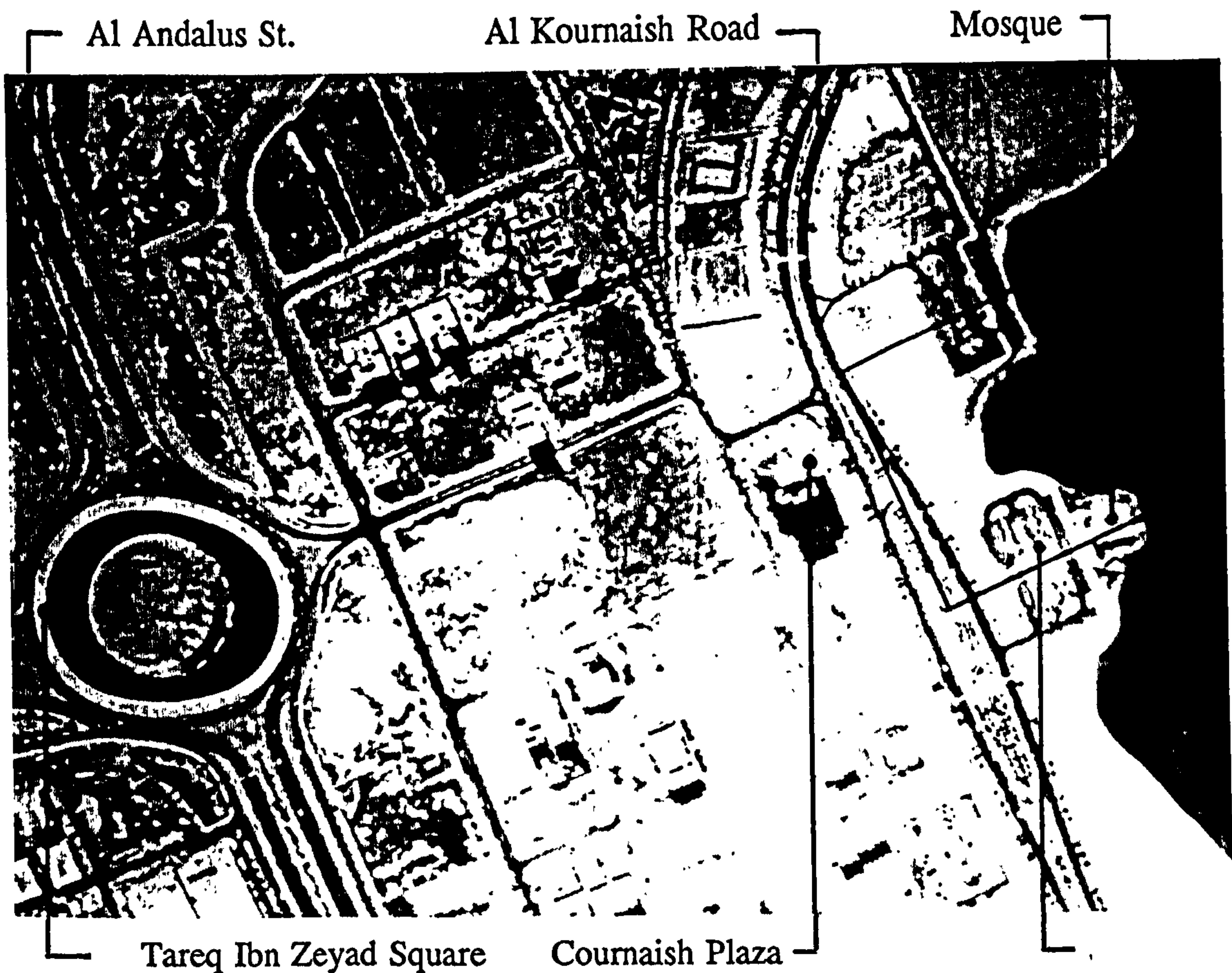
Although the Corniche road itself was the main spine of the seaside project; it is a poor system to facilitate the recreation areas. It was not adequately planned nor designed to protect the safety of patrons using the recreation facilities. The walkway trails in the Corniche are narrow and of consistent width. The width of the trail should vary according to its use, so trails within heavily used recreation areas are normally made wider than trails away from heavily used areas. It is desirable for a trail to be 2.4 to 3.2m in width - without planting or putting any thing in the middle of the walkway - for pleasurable walking and to prevent privacy intrusion or expose its users to the danger of traffic flow. Trails should also be provided with shade as much as possible.

Children's areas were also not adequately distributed or located. The location of children's playgrounds was not often in front of the picnic areas. The location also did not allow for convenient supervision or observation of children. There is also a need to allocate those areas at least 50m. from the shoreline for safety purposes. And last but not least, the prayer areas were not provided at easy intervals along the Corniche road. It is necessary to provide praying shelter with ablution facilities within easy walking distances, preferably near parking areas or coast guard offices to be visible and easily reached and maintained.

The over-looking of people's needs has resulted in many problems. The planning and design of the Corniche of Jeddah has over-looked many, if not all essential landscape architectural principles. There are many problems associated with planning, design and management. For example the problem that is apparently noticed in almost every segment of the Corniche is the phenomenon of people clustering on the pavement side close to the children's playground. Their cars are usually parked parallel to the pavement and the participants then sit in the shade of their cars which also support their backs and provide them with the missing third landscape dimension (screen, shelter and enclosure of beings in temporary private space within the public domain). They occupied almost half of the pavement width, while pedestrians and peddlers (salesmen) pass in front of them and their women. Figures 7.18A and 7.18B illustrates the main problems of using Corniche road's side pavements for outdoor recreation. This area is located to the north of the Marine Institute. It is part of the Northern Corniche, along the

sea coast defined by the Al-Cornish Road on the east, the sea on the west and two parking areas to the north and south. There is a range of children's play equipment distributed around. The rocks are arranged along the sea shore to reduce erosion and encourage fishing.

The main natural features are sandy beaches with scattered rocks in some areas to protect car parking areas from erosion. No adequate services are provided except a mosque and two large parking areas and the mobile shops which are usually found in this area. A variety of children's play equipment is provided.



**FIGURE 7.18 A** An illustrative aerial photograph shows the main layout features of a small segment of the Corniche.<sup>44</sup>

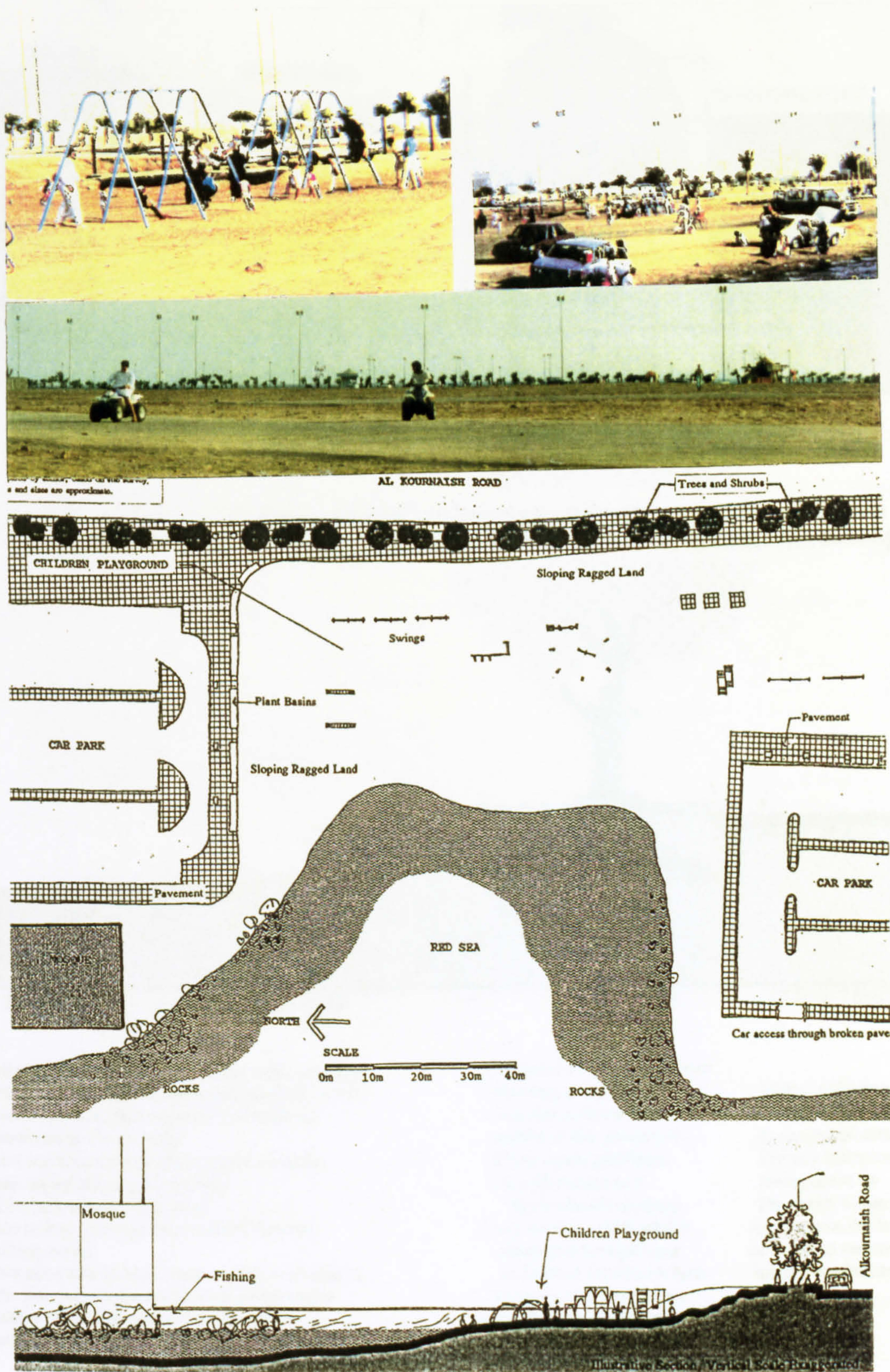
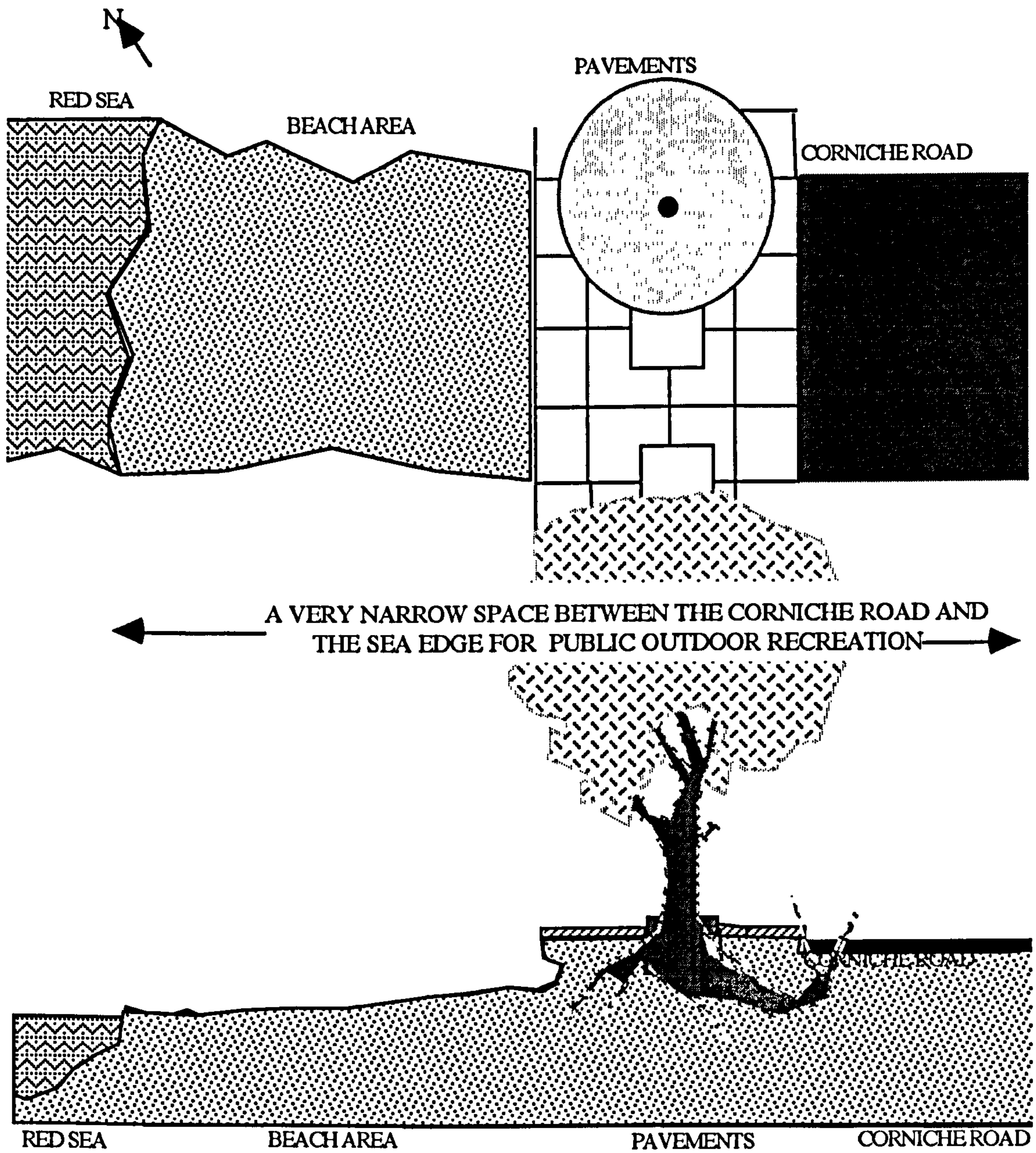


FIGURE 7.18 B Plan, section and photographs illustrating the main landscape features of a typical outdoor recreational area of the North Corniche.



No special services or facilities were provided  
 People especially ladies were paddling in the sea water but are hampered by the sharp boulders at the sea edge  
 Not sufficient open space where children can enjoy playing adequately  
 The lack of secluded areas  
 No toilets, garbage bins and appropriate sitting areas.  
 No adequate outdoor recreational activities at the site except the occasional passers who either paused to watch the sea view or other people (Problem of to see and being seeing)

Problems of side pavements  
 planting and lamp posts usually positioned in the middle of the pavement which cause problems for pedestrians and those who sit on them  
 Very narrow width which cause peddlers passing in front of families which cause severe annoyance and privacy intrusion of families sitting on these pavements.

Noise, pollution  
 children exposed to danger of cars  
 Privacy intrusion from passes by  
 Proximity to family areas cause the lack of being in secure leisure environment

**FIGURE 7.19** A typical illustrative plan and section showing some of the main problems of the Jeddah's Corniche.

It is obvious from figure 7.19 that the design is very primitive and pays no consideration to the basic principles of the landscape architecture. The design is mainly a traffic road with pavements that have direct access to the recreational area without transitional zone or space articulation. The logical design is to have the main public area (road), then to semi-public (parking) then gradually to semi-private (family recreational area), then to private (for women and children). But in the case in hand all areas are connected to each other as one plain area with some primitive scattered structures.

The exiting pattern of the recreational provision is limited and provides nothing for the desired outdoor recreational pursuits areas such as swimming, running, gardens, change of levels, trees, flowers and picnic areas. The site pattern allows people to sit on the pavements confined between cars and pavement to overlook the children's playground and the sea. Figure 7.20 is a diagrammatic plan illustrating where people usually sit in the area, the location of cars in relation to sitting areas and the Mosque.

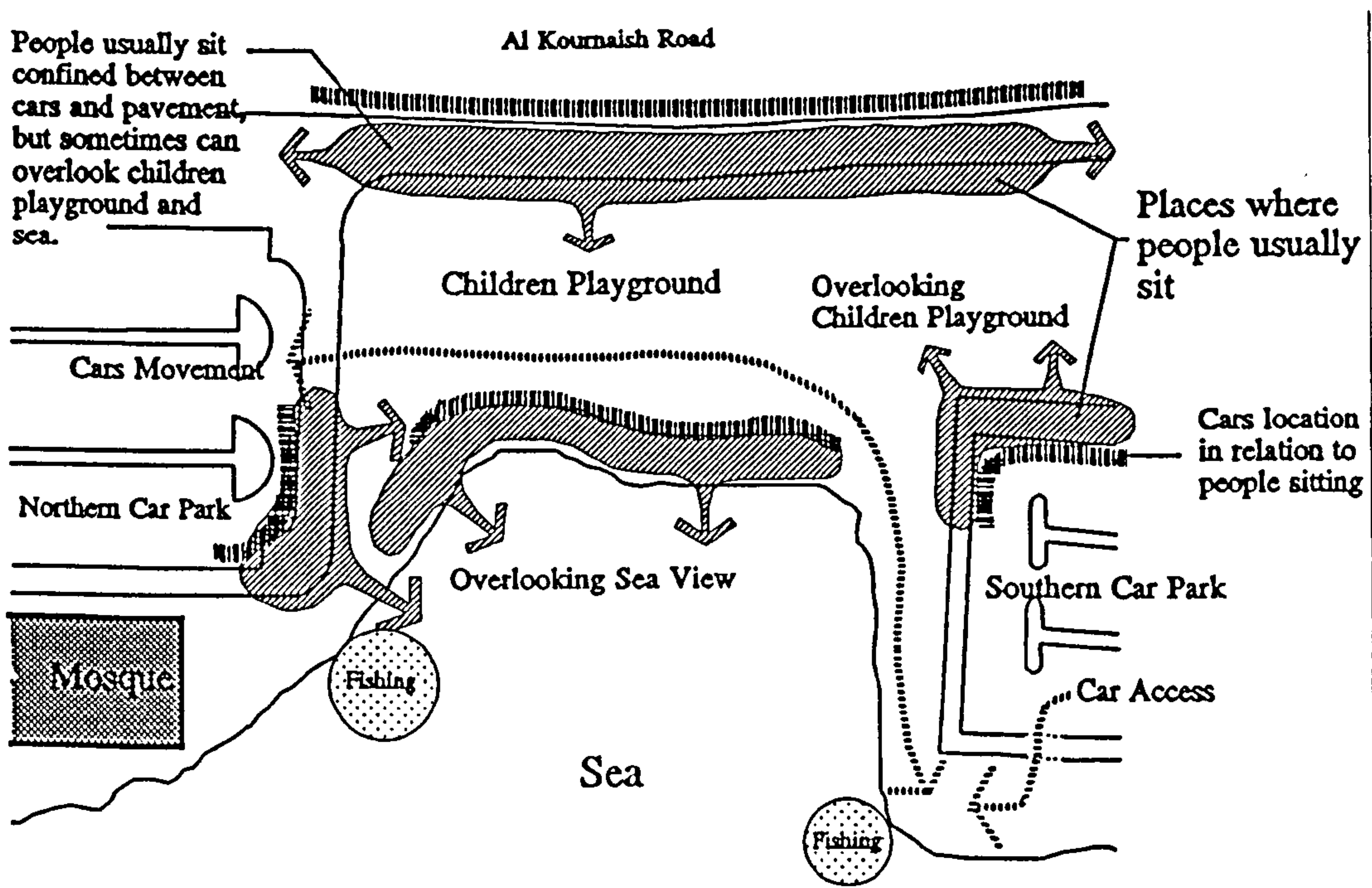


FIGURE 7.20 Diagrammatic plan illustrating people's leisure pattern in the Corniche.<sup>46</sup>

The problem of layout and design of outdoor recreational provisions in the Corniche in particular, and in Saudi Arabia in general, must be based on the idea of "art with a purpose". Frank Lloyd Wright once defined design as "art with a purpose." Also Friedmann<sup>47</sup> argue that terms like environmental psychology and behavioural architecture have been coined to describe the growing belief that the designed environment affects human experience in direct and important ways. It does not determine experience, yet in combination with social influences, designed environments can support satisfaction, happiness and effectiveness.

The existing patterns discourage the participation of active recreational pursuits, cause social tensions, are crowded and cause deteriorating recreational areas. The existing layout of many outdoor areas encourages bachelor youths to bother families, harass women and intrude into privacy. This results in social tension between visitors, forces people to leave the site or limits the freedom of women to participate in outdoor recreational activities within their religious boundaries. By "failing to understand the users' needs, the designers had produced a plan which most emphatically did not work for its intended users . . . How are we to make our designed environments work better? We must concern ourselves with all aspect of the building design process: fine-tuning existing structures, improving new designs, improving minimum building standards and life-safety codes, clarifying user needs and preferences and improving public housing programs. Clearly, we must retain and improve ideas that succeed and abandon ideas that fail."<sup>48</sup> That also applies to outdoor recreational open spaces because landscape architecture is another extension of architecture.

The outdoor recreation planning and design for leisure environments must progress beyond establishing a series of services or facilities such as parks and playgrounds. The emphasis must be on creating physical and social environments in which individuals or every member, gender or disability can satisfy their recreational interests within the cultural, religious and economic limitations and resource constraints likely to be encountered in the planning and design stages. That is to say, the planning and design of outdoor recreational leisure environments should be directed towards

providing as many varied leisure opportunities as possible, with particular attention to city centre.

In essence, the city core must have its unique traditional appearance. The new towers that sprang from the city centre on the sea front are an outstanding example of the economic boom. Thus Jeddah's sea front must be integrated with its city centre to provide leisure, entertainment and a sense of being with nature. That is to say, the city activities must be stretched to encompass all existing bays near the centre. For example, it is important to allow pedestrian access, to tie inner centres with the water through underpasses or overpasses at significant points and to provide outdoor recreational areas with many Mosques for people to enjoy outdoor recreation and shopping without missing their opportunity to pray in due time.

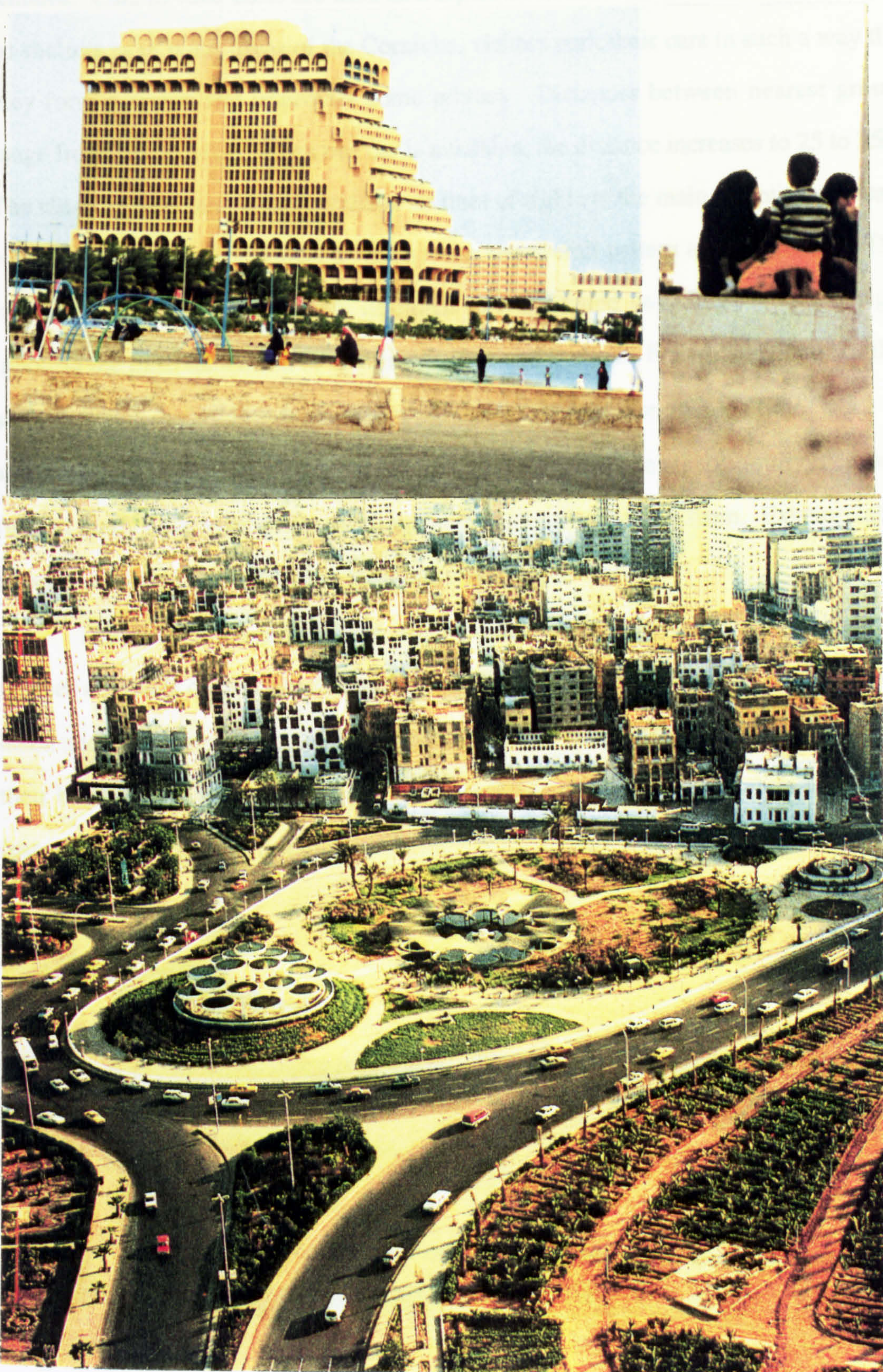
Nowadays, the Central Corniche (the segment of the city centre's sea-front) was rarely used by people due to the smell of sewage that discharged into the sea water, the lack of recreational facilities and the inadequate or difficult accessibility. This zone is occupied by several governmental agencies, like the seaport, the fish market and a huge municipal car parking space serving the CBD. Part of the sea front called *Al-Arba'ain* Lagoon lies close to *Maidan Al-Bay'a'h* (Coronation Square) and before the Foreign Ministry building. Figure 7.21 illustrates the main landscape features of this zone.

One of the problems of Corniche is the vandalism. Al-Shahrani<sup>49</sup> notes that most of the open spaces in the Jeddah were not planned for recreation except the Corniche. Nevertheless the use of these open spaces does not mean that these places satisfied the people desires and needs. The Corniche was vandalised, people destroyed and stole seats, plants and bricks.

The other problems that are associated with the Corniche are related to outdoor recreation areas. For those families who camp on the shore or sit on pavements the entry of bachelors to family areas results in nuisance and the restriction of females' movements on shore. It has been noticed that there are narrow spaces left between sea and sitting, or tent areas which minimise the opportunity to enjoy walking on the sea shore and also cause pedestrians to walk in front of families. The lack of sufficient



prayer places and the lack of auxiliary recreational facilities limits opportunities and causes some areas to be over-used and others under-used.



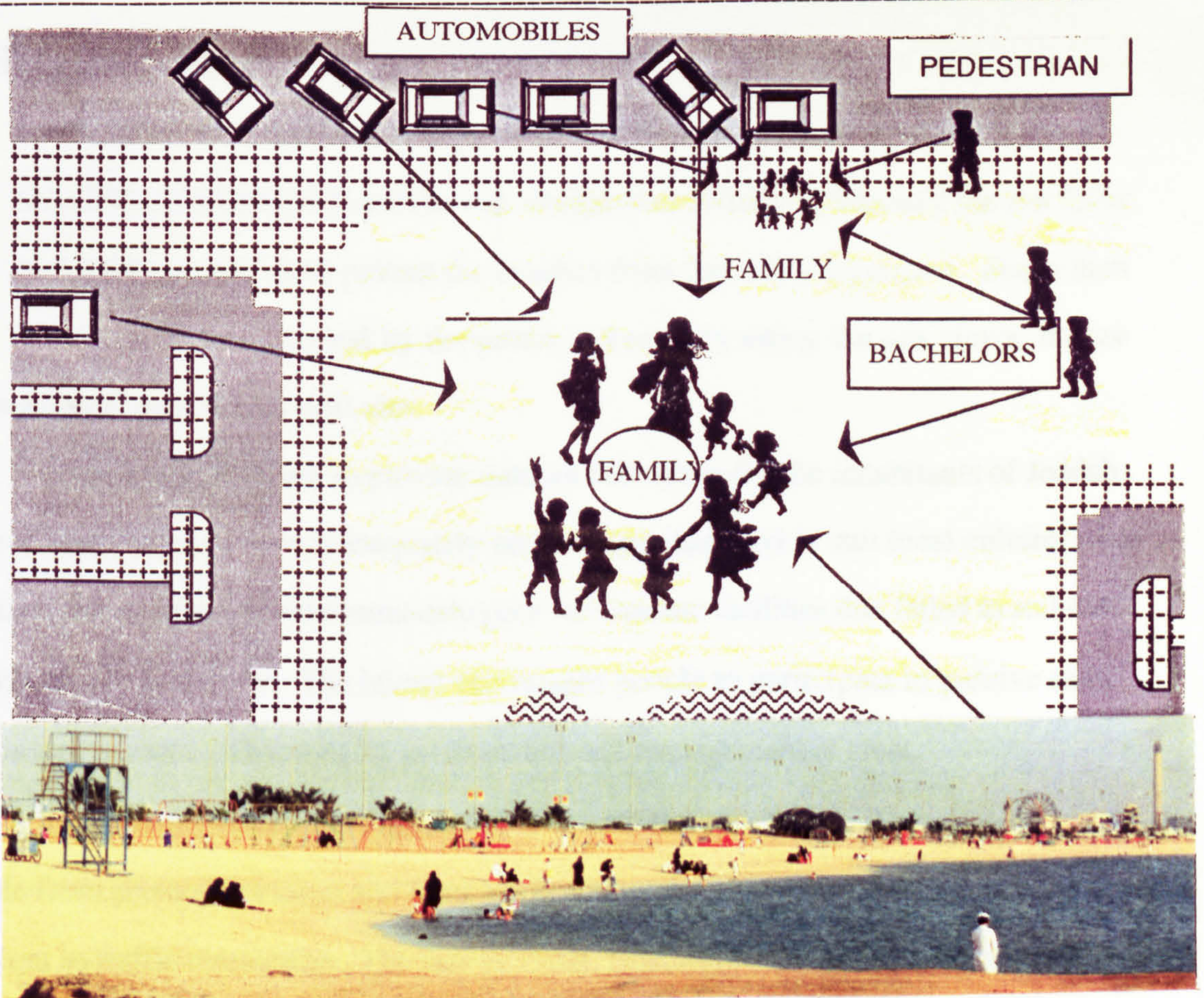
**FIGURE 7.21** *Illustrates some of the Central Corniche areas and its problem of privacy, exposing different areas over looking each other and lack of space articulation.*

When more than one family are camping together, males gather separately from females. Cars in such cases are used as a separator in between them. Where there are no shelters as in many areas of the Corniche, visitors park their cars in such a way that they form a screen and improvise some privacy. Distances between nearest groups range from 7m. to 10m. When one car is available, the distance increases to 25 to 35m. The *visual contact* and *visual corridors* or lines of sight are the main essential landscape elements that are poorly achieved. Even more, the overall pattern is homogenous. That is to say many areas are mainly designed in fragmented two dimensional designs ignoring the third dimension of creating screens and shelters. For instance, big family's shelters which are equipped with tables only provide shade during noon time, when the sun is perpendicular, do not have much room to accommodate all the family members. Instead many have to sit under the direct sun which is harmful to them. Existing tables or seats are often used for picnic food and other items.

The distribution of provision was not adequately achieved. Children's playing devices are made of iron which becomes rusty. No considerations for safety have been taken and no maintenance at all is evident. Moreover some visitors use them to support their backs and to have some shade. Figures 7.22 and 7.23 illustrate the main design features and privacy intrusions.



**FIGURE 7.22** *Playing device used to support back of users as well as to gain some shade and the sense of being in personal space and territory.*



**FIGURE 7.23** *The privacy intrusions. Question mark of the family an attempt to find privacy at Jeddah's Corniche?*

## CONCLUSION

**I**N CONCLUSION the Corniche was designed originally to beautify the sea front of Jeddah, as well as to protect the beaches from the city's expansion. Since then it has been left to be used by the public, where they enjoy the sea views, breeze and sea-based recreational activities.

Its design goals were to provide outdoor recreation for the inhabitants of Jeddah. But recreational sites were inadequately planned and designed to suit local culture. The outdoor recreational areas accommodate poor recreational facilities that failed to suit each individual of the society. The layout encourages people to participate in passive rather than active pursuits. The need for maintenance and management is great.

The existing landscape design concepts were ill thought out. They fail to protect people from privacy intrusion and from traffic and pedestrian dangers, as most areas are adjacent to traffic circulation. The lack of order, organisation and hierarchical zones as well as vertical enclosures are the missing elements of the Corniche. The absence of those elements causes social, physical and psychological problems which influence people's satisfaction, behaviour and attitudes. People's satisfaction may be influenced by the layout of existing facilities, because the design will affect people's way of life and their interactions with each other.

The limited outdoor recreational facilities affect people's participation in passive recreations such as chatting and occasionally paddling in the sea. Women especially are not given the same chance that has been given to men. Some ladies hardly get the chance to participate in active recreation without bothering from bachelors. Although there are some ladies paddling in the sea water, these are hampered by their clothes, sharp boulders at the sea area and their complete exposure to other eyes.

It is the tradition to see men and ladies sometimes sitting apart from each other, separated by a car, or the men sitting outside on areas overlooking the sea or the site. Thus, men and ladies of large families or groups sometimes prefer sitting apart to allow ladies to enjoy the outings. That raises the question of why the existing pattern and physical arrangements were not adequately designed to give more chances for visitors to

enjoy the active outdoor recreation. One of the major problems of recreational open spaces is their isolation and fragmentation. Even the system of the Corniche which links the open spaces along the beach is poorly integrated and those different areas appear to be one monotonous unit despite the variety of patterns.

Not investigating how people use outdoor recreation areas nor their demands and requirements in the light of local culture to aid the design of the recreational facilities causes various social and physical problems. Because existing facilities "are usually provided without any participation from the public who are going to use them. The only way to convey their desires or complaints is through newspapers."<sup>50</sup> There is a lack of landscape design criteria or up-to-date standards for new recreational open spaces and improvement of the existing ones. The existing design practice is little more than the agricultural practice of ways of planting. In fact, many people thought that landscape architecture was an extension of gardening and planting schools.

From the researcher's point of view, and due to his experience with the Corniche and other outdoor recreational areas in the Kingdom since the 1970s, and having been a landscape architect for almost 10 years, the problem of privacy and the problem of arranging landscape elements to create adequate urban open space is seen as the most important issue to be investigated in the light of local tradition, heritage and Islamic principles. This is because one important objective for landscape architecture in Saudi Arabia is to define ways to achieve decent privacy for families and to utilise efficiently squandered assets. The aim is to develop certain design criteria relating to sizes, location, services, orientation, three-dimensional structures and space articulation and to order them with transition zones. The need is for a more comprehensive study of outdoor recreation in Saudi Arabia to evaluate, plan, design, and enhance by the use of progressive and up-to-date landscape architecture techniques. There is a need for coherent policies for outdoor recreation planning and design, as well as a prerequisite for a selective approach to each urban open space within the context of an overall system of integrated outdoor recreational provision.

The next chapter will raise questions, the answers to which may help to solve some of these problems.

## Notes And References

---

- 1 Pesce, Angelo.(1976) Jeddah: Portrait of an Arabian City (Italy: Grafiche Trevisan - Castelfranco Veneto). p.148
- 2 Al-Shahrani, M. (1992) An Inquiry into Leisure and Recreation Pattern and its Relationship to the Open Space and Landscape Design: The Case of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia Unpublished PhD, University of Edinburgh. p. 115
- 3 Bokhary, A. Y. (1980) Jeddah, A case Study in Urban Formation, unpublished Ph.D. Diss, University of Pennsylvania, pp. 368-369
- 4 Farsi, M. "Jeddah's Corniche" in: Al-Fakahani, H. (N.D.) Jeddah: The Bride of the Red Sea, ed. (Cairo: The Arabian Publishing House for Encyclopaedias).
- 5 Municipality of Jeddah (N.D.) Jeddah Recreation Facilities (Jeddah: Sahar Printing Press), p.13
- 6 Deputy Ministry for Town Planning, Ministry of Municipal & Rural Affairs, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, (1979) Jeddah p Action Master Plans, Technical Report No. 9 Revision and Updating of the Existing Master Plan, project No. 203 p.45
- 7 Qadhi, O.A., and Ibrahim, H. (1981) City Planning in Saudi Arabia (In Arabic: Takhtiet Almudon fi Almamlakah Alarabiyyah Alsaudiyyah) (Riyadh: The Saudi Arabian Press Co) p. 51-52
- 8 Bokhary, op. cit., p.374
- 9 Al-Shahrani op. cit.
- 10 Oxford Dictionary.
- 11 Waller, E. (1985) Landscape Planning in Saudi Arabia College of Engineering, K.A.A.U., Project No. 05-410. Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, p.58
- 12 Ibid.
- 13 Farsi, M op.cit., p. 422
- 14 Al-Shahrani, op. cit., p.93
- 15 Mane, M. (1985) Jeddah: A Story of a City (in Arabic: Jeddah, Qissat Madinah) (Jeddah: Dar Al-Asfahani for Press). p.168, as cited in Al-Shahrani, M. (1992). op . cit., p.116
- 16 Ibid., p. 168
- 17 Farsi, M. A. (1984) "Beautification of the Jeddah Corniche" in: Municipality of Jeddah Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Training Seminar for Engineers : 13 the to 15 the February 1984 (Tudhoe: Ma Donald Press Ltd.) Centre for Middle Eastern and Islamic Studies, University of Durham, pp. 60-70
- 18 Waller, E., Op. cit.

- 
- 19 Al-Hussayen, M. (1986) Alternatives to Achieve Privacy in Al-Suwaday Park - Riyadh" (in Arabic: Beadle Letahqiq Alkhusoueyyah fi Muntazah Al-Swaidi Be Arriyadh) in: The Circle of Architecture and Environment, Edited by Al-Hathloul et al, Riyadh: King Saudi University, pp. 10-3.
- 20 MOMRA., Jeddah Action Master Plan, No. 9, 1980.
- 21 Al-Fakahani, Hassan (N.D.) Jeddah : The Bride of the Red Sea: Progress and Development (Cairo: The Arabian Publishing House for Encyclopaedias).
- 22 Al-Riyadh the daily newspaper, No. 8684, Friday 3/4/1992
- 23 Waller, op. cit., p.63
- 24 Directorate general of mineral resources, Ministry of Petroleum and Mineral Resources Kingdom of Saudi Arabia (1973), Engineering Geological Map of Jeddah and Spot Information Map on Ground Conditions in Jeddah, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, (Jeddah: Geologic Map GM-8, by D. Laurent. M. Daessle, Y. Berton, and M. Dehlavi).
- 25 Al-Shahrani, op. cit., p. 9
- 26 Farsi, M. (N.D) Jeddah A Change Eco-System Municipality of Jeddah (Jeddah: Printed by Dar Al Asfahani).
- 27 Municipality of Jeddah, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Corniche North Coast Action Area (1971-1991) p.8
- 28 Al-Madinah the daily newspaper, No. 7927,, Jan. 1989
- 29 Nahass, M.(1986) An Analysis of the Need for Public Recreation Facilities in the City of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia unpublished Plan Paper Submitted to the Dept. of Recreation Park and Leisure Studies, Jeddah, p. 34
- 30 Farsi, M. in: Al-Fakahani op.cit. p. 422
- 31 Al-Madinah daily newspaper No 8712 Ramadan, 7 / 1411AH
- 32 Ibid.
- 33 The General Presidency for Youth Welfare Kingdom of Saudi Arabia.
- 34 Adapted from Jeddah Corniche North Coast Action Area (JCNCAA) 1973
- 35 Ibid.
- 36 Kendeel, A. (N.D.) Jeddah, The Sea Bride (in Arabic: Jeddah Aroos Albahr) (Jeddah: Kendeel Commercial Est.) Vol. I.
- 37 Waller, op. cit.
- 38 Ibid.
- 39 Jeddah North Corniche Action Master Plan, op. cit.

- 
- 40 Al-Farsi, op. cit.
- 41 Ibid., pp. 145-151
- 42 Nahass, op.cit., p. 7
- 43 Al-Farsi, M. S (1989),The Story of Art in Jeddah (in Arabic: Gissat Al-Fa'n fi Jeddah) ( Jeddah: Dar Al-Biela'dh for Press and Publications). p.237
- 44 Jeddah Plans, as cited in Al-Shahrani, op. cit., p. 210
- 45 Al-Sharani, op.cit.
- 46 Ibid.. p.219
- 47 Friedmann, A. et al.(1978) Environmental Design Evaluation (New York: Plenum Press)
- 48 Ibid.
- 49 Al-Shahrani, op. cit.
- 50 Ibid. p. 305



# CHAPTER 8

## Research Questions



# 8

## Research Questions

---

### INTRODUCTION

**T**HIS CHAPTER highlights the questions to be explored in the Corniche case study area. In particular, and after thorough investigation of the relevant literature of the complex aspects of recreational and leisure patterns, this chapter will give a brief background about the ideals, design and planning of outdoor open spaces. Thereafter it will generate questions about current landscape design for recreation in Saudi Arabia.

Recreational planning and design aims to provide people with what they want, where and when they want it and with an appropriate balance of resource development and protection, the right facilities, in the right place, and the appropriate layout and management. The designing of outdoor areas is not a static process, but a dynamic and changing one. Landscape architects should work with all the disciplines involved in creating amenities and opportunities for people in their environment. The outcome of the final design should not reflect their own preferences but respect the needs and demands of users and other interested parties. The design should correspond to culture with minimum conflicts of interest, traffic, noise, pollution and congestion. The overall patterns should be functional, attractive and healthy, providing enjoyable places, safeguarding public interest and conserving and fostering good use of all the designed environment.

Whether these requirements are met will be indicated by the answers to a number of questions. For example, do visitors use the site as designers intended? How well do designers respect the tradition and religious culture of the environment? How successful is the day to day management of outdoor facilities and services?

The answers to these and related questions will depend upon how policies and planning are allocated to leisure resources and the reasons behind their determination, the type and range of facilities provided, their location and the way they are managed and formed. It is beyond the scope of this research to find the answers for all general questions. However a number of relevant questions will be explored through the content and arguments of this chapter.

In order to develop the above points, this chapter will derive its questions from the earlier assessment of problems and issues chapter 6. It will proceed from the opportunities for activities that the Corniche has to offer, to how visitors use them, and their satisfaction with the provisions. The discussion will proceed to more detailed questions such as what are the main problems associated with the existing pattern of outdoor recreational areas of Jeddah's Corniche? How can visitor's satisfaction be increased? To what degree should the problems identified be solved within the site and to what extent elsewhere? And how can future provision be better designed, and better managed? This will be achieved by examining how the existing site provides various desired facilities; which of the landscapes elements and concepts contribute to visitor's enjoyment ; and how that enjoyment might be increased.

## QUESTIONS ABOUT JEDDAH'S OUTDOOR RECREATIONAL PROVISION

**I**N ORDER TO EXAMINE the existing outdoor recreational and leisure pattern of Jeddah's Corniche, it is important to address the following main key questions.

- What opportunities/ activities does the Corniche offer?
- How do visitors use the Corniche (different parts / different times) what do they do?
- How well used are the various facilities that have been provided?
- Does the Corniche offer what people want?
- Are people satisfied with what is presented? If not, why not?
- What contributes to visitors enjoyment?
- What detracts from visitors' enjoyment?
- What additional provisions do visitors seek?
- Do visitors use the Corniche as designers intended? If not, why not?
- How well do designers respect tradition, cultural and religious considerations?
- How well does the Corniche meet the requirements of Saudi families?
- What are the main problems / opportunities?
- How can visitor satisfaction be increased? Should more visitors be encouraged and, if so, how?
- To what degree should problems identified in chapter 6 be solved within the site; and to what extent elsewhere?
- To what degree should problems be solved by future provision, better design or better management?

**The research questions include consideration of the following.**

- **Degree of privacy:** (the degree to which visitors control the access of others (either physically or visually), to where they are.
- **Territoriality:** (The feeling individuals or groups have that they control what happens in a place, that they can use it as they like and can change it physically (if possible) to reflect their personalities.
- **Physical elements in the setting:** how do these influence visitor's satisfaction and reactions to the privacy principle, for example, what objects, barriers, and spatial or environmental attributes (such as size, shape, and space organisation) does the site have? What objects has the designer put into the site to indicate how spaces are articulated and used (functional considerations).
- **Barriers and other three dimensional structures:** what has have been provided between areas, what connections and what separations, what fields did the designer set up by the way he planned and arranged spaces?

It is worth asking whether the lack of basic landscape principles and the interpretation of local cultural and religious principles as well as social and physical factors all contributed to raise questions about Jeddah's outdoor recreational provision. For example, about adequacy of privacy for Saudi families, the lack of suitable outdoor opportunities to suit women's leisure patterns, and the lack of adequate design concepts which create conflicts? In other words why do the existing design concepts create conflicts? Why were the design concepts (which create conflicts) employed in shaping the overall outdoor recreational areas? Accordingly the answer to the questions will explore and shed light on how to solve the problems of present and future outdoor recreation in Saudi Arabia, as well as showing how those answers can help to mediate, enhance and give guidance on how to design better landscape architecture in Saudi Arabia.

## THE OVERALL OUTDOOR RECREATIONAL PATTERN

**I**N THE LIGHT OF THE PREVIOUS QUESTIONS about Jeddah's outdoor recreational provision, an argument about the overall recreational patterns will explain some reasons behind these questions. No doubt there were some essential basic environmental design techniques which were applied from ancient times. However whenever such concepts were not fully utilised in shaping landscape physical elements, various social, physical and environmental problems may result. It is obvious that the principles of landscape design are the combination of various concepts to form an integrated and well designed provision. Rutledge<sup>1</sup>, in his seminal work *Anatomy of a Park*, put forward what he calls a set of 'umbrella considerations' or principles of design. These include:

- **Design with purpose** - so that the appropriate relationships are established between the various parts of the recreation complex - natural elements, use areas, structure, people, animals and forces of nature.
- **Design for people** - rather than to meet some rigid standards, or the impersonal demands of machines, equipment and administrative convenience. More attention to

the 'why' of design would go a long way towards structuring outdoor areas to satisfy human behavioural needs.

- ***Design for both function and aesthetics*** - striking a balance of dollar values and human values with the achievement of efficiency interwoven with the generation of a satisfying sensory experience.

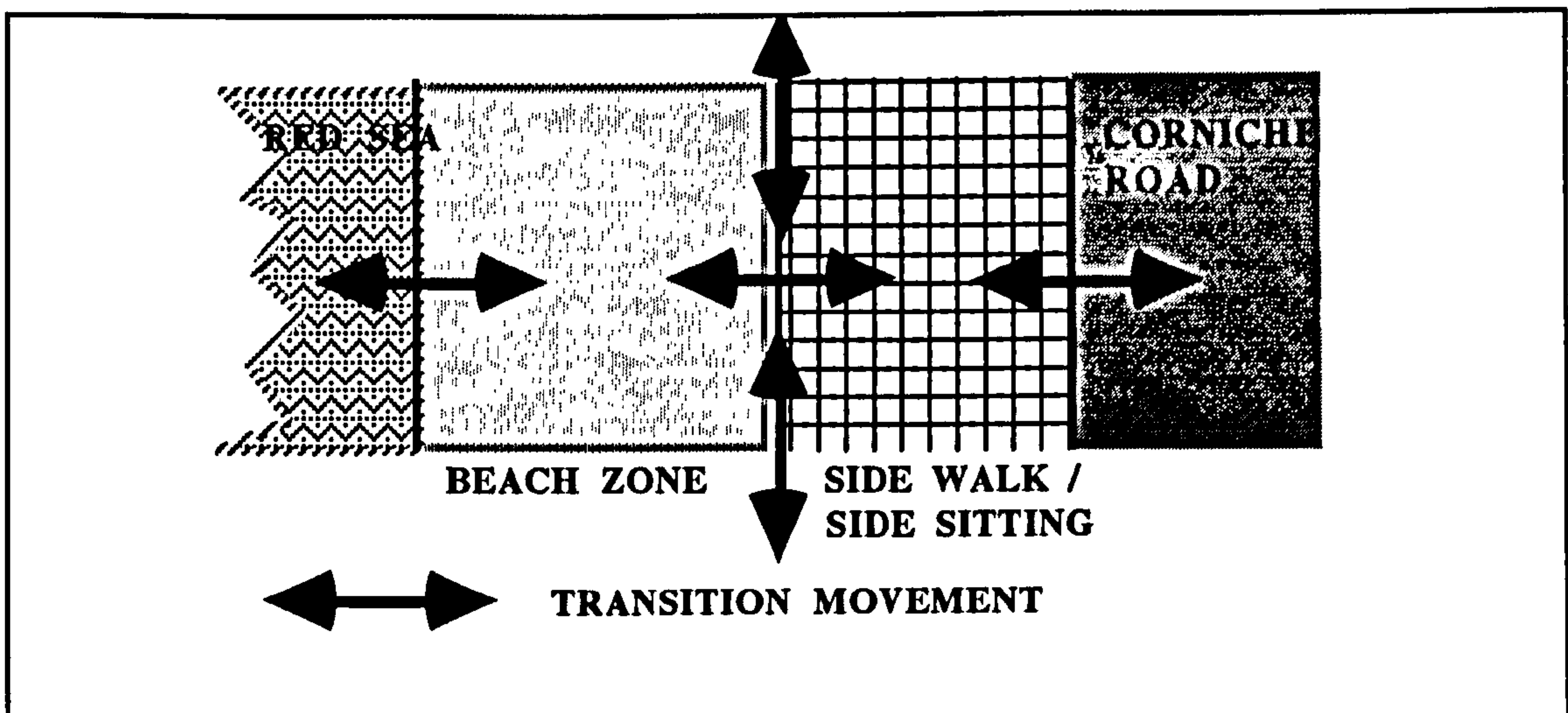
The design of outdoor recreational pattern is related to micro-location and the moulding and fitting of the plans to specific topographic and landscape features of the site, while maintaining the desired positions of the facilities and circulation patterns. Planning and design of the recreation site should conform to known user preferences for given environmental conditions or situations. Merely providing a picnic site is not enough. Service requirements, supporting facilities, equipment and site refinements should reflect the style and characteristics of participants. They should also be located to fit in with normal behavioural patterns, minimise conflict and confusion and facilitate movement within the site.

A basic functional criterion of planning and design is that the recreation site and associated developments satisfy technical requirements, i.e. that they be usable in the sense of meeting standards of size, spacing and quantities. Operating needs and conditions are also important and apart from meeting health and safety regulations, site developments should provide for the comfort and convenience of users.<sup>2</sup> For instance, the principles of integration, hierarchies, organisation and unity with variety are important aspects to be involved adequately in outdoor social places. Integration as mentioned by Chermayeff<sup>3</sup> is the integrity of each space, the preservation of its special, carefully specified environmental characteristics, and depends on the physical elements that provide separation, insulation, access, and controlled transfer between domains. It is crucial to maintain the validity of the continuity of patterns between and among different open spaces. Yet if the continuity of pattern is valid there must exist scientific principles of form and structure which have guided the entire process and must appear, though possibly disguised, in many realms, inorganic, personal, and social units. The integrity of domains and the efficiency of transfer between them is the crucial issue in organisation. Who and what interferes with what and whom, to what extent, when and

how, are significant questions that urban designers now have to ask themselves.<sup>4</sup> In addition, why appropriate landscape architectural physical elements were not found in some outdoor recreational areas in Saudi Arabia. The overall pattern of some recreational and leisure patterns in Saudi Arabia reveals an absence of a satisfactory landscape structure or recreational provision. This is an important design concept in shaping such outdoor spaces within the concept of applying many hierarchies of clearly articulated spaces, such as the provisions of special domains for all degrees of privacy and all degrees of recreational facilities, ranging from the most intimately private to the most intensely communal. The lack of vertical enclosures were the main reasons for privacy intrusion. That is why the existing recreational patterns did not comprehensively preserve the individual demand for privacy. The individual in outdoor recreational areas requires barriers against the sounds and sights, only physical landscape insulation (shrubs, walls, screens, rocks, mounds and any suitable vertical barriers) can prevent the dangers of invasion-interruption by people, traffic and noise which can inhibit and cause chaos confusion and social problems. In order to be able to generate questions about outdoor recreational sites it is important to bear in mind those questions related to users' use of space, behaviour and attitudes and to those concepts and techniques which were applied to shape the layout. For example, there is a need for the provision for relaxation, concentration, contemplation, introspection and healthy sensuousness, all of which are conducive to intimacy, tenderness, wonder and delight. The integrity of realms in every activity can be contained in a tangible, physical zone, and each zone thorough its formal clarity and integrity induces, reflects, and sustains the activity it has been designed to serve. In short, hierarchical organisation is an important feature of any complex form, whether natural or technical, and is therefore germane to the urban peoples of the modern world.<sup>5</sup>

The lack of adequate integration systems of landscape elements, as well as the insufficiency of recreational facilities and opportunities limits and decreases people's satisfaction and enjoyment. The existing opportunities were scattered along the Corniche areas without an adequate sense that they integrate with, or accommodate, outdoor recreational activities. For example as was mentioned before, the whole Corniche is

constructed of a 'linear narrow coastal strip' with paved areas for walking or sitting, and parking lots taking advantage of sea lines. The concept of one plain area that is limited from one side by a traffic road and from the other side the line of the sea coast, is a very primitive and poor concept. This is because of many interrelated reasons. Firstly the access points as well as main traffic flow overlapped each other, i.e. there is no separation or transitional zone that leads visitors to move from parking areas to gradually articulated spaces and places. Figure 8.1 illustrates this concept.

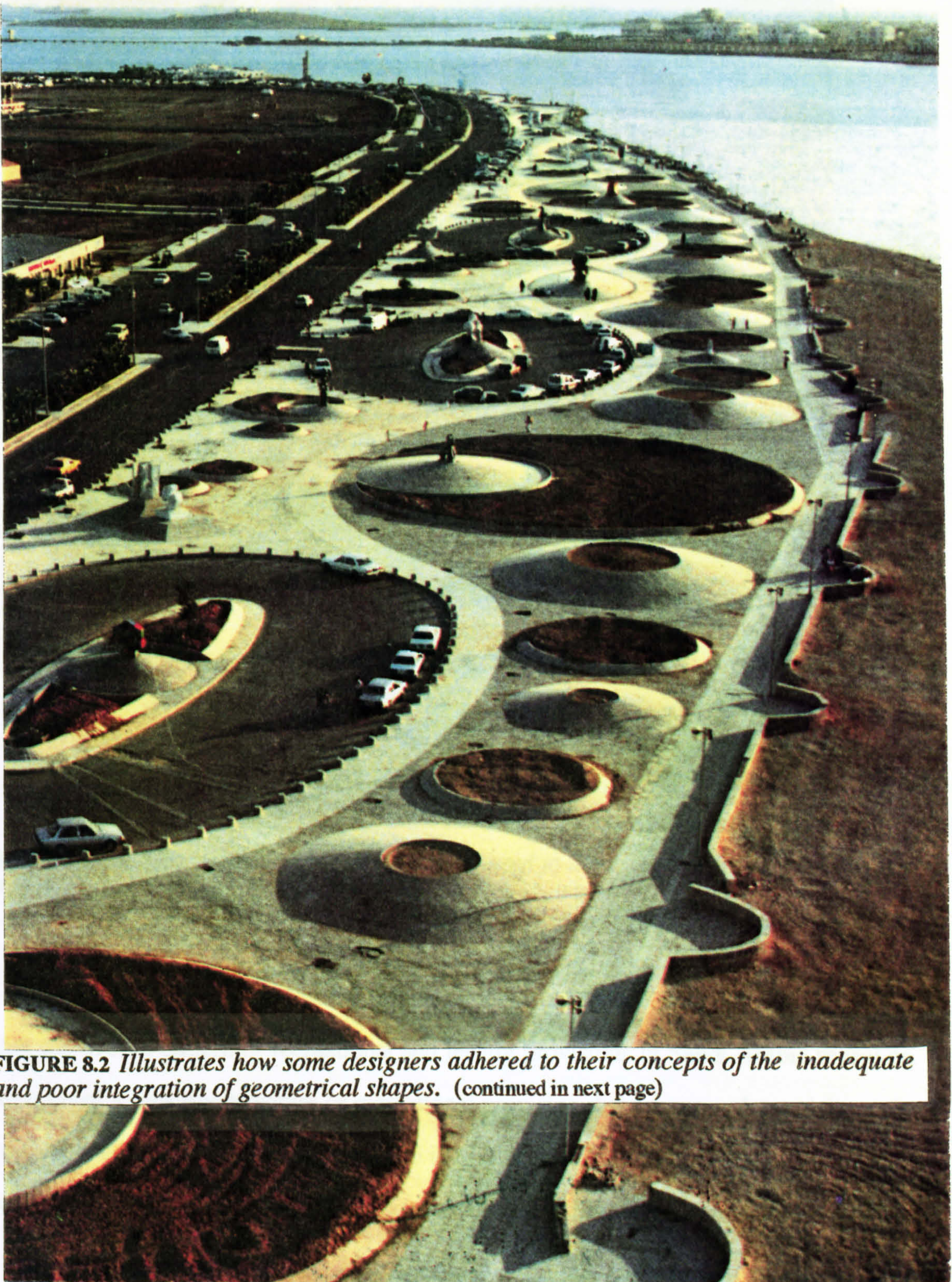


**FIGURE 8.1** *An illustrative diagrammatic plan of a segment of the North Corniche area, where the lack of space articulation causes movements from one zone to the other without any feeling of being in certain zones. (All the spaces are, to some extent, similar to each other in terms of planning and design concept).*

Figure 8.2 illustrates how some designers adhered their concepts to inadequate and poor integration of the geometrical shapes of squares, rectangles, circles and fragmented shapes that, in many examples, failed to facilitate the social and environmental components of the locality. The forms of these ill-thought out physical settings are alien to both the nature of Saudi families and the nature of the Saudi Arabian desert environment. Their validity is also in question because the physical and spatial layout does not adequately accommodate the leisure pattern of a typical Saudi family. For example, some designers adhered their concepts to inadequate integration of spatial and physical zones and layouts, which were not integrated to facilitate the social and environmental components of the locality and their way of life. Moreover some of those



patterns and the layout of outdoor spaces were not adequately applicable to the precise form of the Islamic cultural atmosphere. What is meant by Islamic atmosphere is that which is formed when the overall social provisions are designed in such a way that each member of the society feels that his dignity is preserved among different activities of the site, his privacy is adequately maintained, his social contacts are within the boundary of Islamic law, and his family is secure from all other interferences.



**FIGURE 8.2** *Illustrates how some designers adhered to their concepts of the inadequate and poor integration of geometrical shapes. (continued in next page)*



**FIGURE 8.2** Illustrates how some designers adhered to their concepts of the inadequate and poor integration of geometrical shapes.

Do visitors use the Corniche as designers intended? If not, why not? It seems that the overall pattern of recreational and leisure provisions in Saudi Arabia reveal an absence of a sensitive structure or recreational provision that accommodates visitors use or their needs. There are insufficient and inadequate *barriers* against the natural, social and physical factors, where there is inadequate physical insulation against the danger and

pain of invasion-interruption by people, traffic, and noise. This matter is a crux issue of this research because it deals with the overall structure, pattern and physical and spatial layout of outdoor recreational provision.

## **DOES THE CORNICHE OFFER WHAT PEOPLE WANT?**

**P** EOPLE'S REQUIREMENTS vary and cannot all be provided on one particular site. That does not however mean that we neglect their demands, desires and their involvement in shaping their environment. Basic requirements have no exception and should be provided in each designed area. People also want their families, especially women, to have equal opportunities to enjoy the outings. Women are the other half of society. Their development, education and health is the main trigger to development of our children. Recreation (passive or active) will enhance their health, personality, mentality and psychology which later will be reflected in their children. But what will happen if the women cannot enjoy the outdoor recreational areas within their cultural environment? They will stay in their small houses surrounded by four walls. That is why it is very important that outdoor recreational areas must be shaped to accommodate the actual life style and leisure pattern of Saudi families. Many Saudi families have complained that many outdoor recreational areas were not designed to facilitate their needs. The need for privacy, the need to be outside the visual contact or visual corridors of strangers, the need for suitable areas that allow them to participate in the healthy active recreational sports, rather than sitting, chatting and watching others from behind their cars or veils.

That raised various questions such as did the existing outdoor recreational areas offer sufficient areas and facilities that cope with the great demand for more activities? In addition, do the visitors feel the sense of being in secure, private and shaded enclosures public areas? The lack of sufficient areas, facilities and services will increase people's dissatisfaction with what has been presented. Outdoor recreation pursuit is not only to participate in passive recreation without balancing it with active pursuits. The nature of human beings is not static, but dynamic, they need to play, run, swim, walk, ride horses

and all other recreational activities. On the other hand people also need some quiet areas away from public or man-made environments as they want to be in a natural surroundings and have contact with nature. Always there must be a balance between active and passive, hard landscape and softness of the environment, harmony with some contrast and variety within unity. The balance is the heart of the matter. The Almighty Allah said that: "Verily all things have we created, in proportion and measure".<sup>6</sup>

Does the layout of the physical and spatial structure flow smoothly from public wide zones to semi-public greenery zones to articulated spaces with mystery and imagination and beautiful views, that lead to another more active semi private zone for children or for the family, then sudden feeling more attractive opportunities for all the members of the family in a trouble-free zone? Are the people offered wide spaces, protected from danger of traffic and bothering by bachelors? Do the people in the Corniche use the site at certain times? For example, why do some of them use it very early in the morning when there are few users or why do some of them leave the site to travel to a remote area where there are wide and secure spaces? Is it to be away from bachelors' eyes, or because the site is very crowded and do where they go? Does the existing provision offered people with appropriate opportunities, in the right location, in a perfect design, in a suitable and convenient environment? Do people seek for innovative, adequate, durable and qualitative recreational facilities that suit the children, for women for the elderly, and for the disabled or they are satisfied with the what the Corniche offered them right now?

## **HOW WELL DO DESIGNERS RESPECT TRADITION, CULTURE AND RELIGIOUS CONSIDERATIONS?**

**T**RADITION, CULTURE AND RELIGIOUS PRINCIPLES are the main matrix in which all environmental design patterns must fit. From an Islamic point of view, all actions of human beings must respect their cultural demands. These demands include being in harmony with the environment, respect and not harming or causing mutual harm to each other. The main aim of creating all Jinn and human

beings is to worship the Almighty Allah only. "I have only created Jinns and men, that They may serve Me."<sup>7</sup> "Creation is not for idle sport or play. God has a serious Purpose behind it, which, in our imperfect state, we can only express by saying that each creature is given the chance of development and progress towards the Goal. Which is God. God is the source and centre of all power and all goodness, and our progress depends upon our putting ourselves into accord with His Will."<sup>8</sup>

Accordingly it is the responsibility of designers to aid in maintaining and controlling peoples' behaviour and attitudes towards the nature of the environment and towards their norms and the interaction of them together according to their cultural principles. This is because the overall pattern will influence users to behave according to the physical and spatial structure, according to the opportunity provided and services.

The hierarchy of open spaces maintains and encourages privacy for people. Privacy and security were the most prevalent characteristics. The families, the ladies and children, were kept safe by the men of the community. These spatial patterns resulted from respecting the principles and behavioural guidelines of religion and the culture of the locality. The concept of privacy is highly regarded between Muslims and provides a means of enjoying living for the users. It was social etiquette that when a lady passed before a man he should not look at her, but he should lower his head, which corresponds to the *Shari'a* teaching. The prophet, peace be upon him, discouraged men from sitting in the streets and thoroughfares to provide safe places for passers by, especially ladies. He said:

*"Avoid sitting on thoroughfares', they said it is difficult to avoid as they are our gathering places where we spend time talking, ' but if you insist then you should respect the rights of thoroughfares'. What are the rights they asked, 'Avoid staring, do not create harm. Salute back to those who salute you, bid to honour and forbid dishonour."*<sup>9</sup>

In examining the spatial organisation of the Corniche many questions has been raised. For example, how well have the designers ordered spaces. How have they prevented problems of privacy invasion and danger of traffic and sea hazards? That is to

ask, do the designers of the Corniche comprehensively respect the tradition and culture of local people and their environment? Does the existing planning and design of outdoor recreation encourage visitors, especially conservative Muslim families, to utilise the opportunity provided by those spaces to satisfy their needs? Do these places succeed in providing a sensible range of safe places for children to play, and for ladies to go out and enjoy participating in active recreational pursuits? In other words, does the Corniche succeed to provide adequate landscape design that discourages strangers or intruders from bothering family areas? These youths have plenty of leisure time and it is the responsibility of the authorities to provide recreational opportunities which are extracted from tradition and are more beneficial to their health. It is not preferable that youths consume their valuable leisure time in meaningless activities, such as gathering in cafe areas or playing games that cause tension and sometimes cause them to fight each other by playing the dangerous play card game of '*Baloot*'. This game is formed with four players - two against two- and some games take the whole night (sometimes more than 8 hours). The Muslim scholars now advice people through the media to prevent this game. Al-Shehri<sup>10</sup> notes that 99% of those who play *Baloot* end the game by quarrel, tensions and fighting. 85% of those who play it were ashamed of it. 80% of players learned it at the age of 18 years old. 67% of those who play it smoke lots of cigarettes during the game time, and 70% of players learn to smoke during playing time.

Do the designers respect the environment? The environment which enclosed landscape of trees, walled-rooms made of shrubs with native plants and a logical order of zoned spaces with a natural sense not man-made expression. The concept of *a whole hierarchy of space for leisure use* rarely exists. The boundary between private and public spaces was not adequately designed to provide *transitional zones* or to articulate spaces according to tradition, culture and environment. In other words, *Site volumes : degrees of vertical enclosure* do not exist in many outdoor recreational sites on the Corniche. One essential requirement of Saudi families is to be in an outdoor space with vertical enclosure to provide privacy.

The vertical enclosures or site volumes are the essential *spatial impact* on the leisure pattern, which in turn influences visitors' attitudes and behaviour. Their size,

height and visual corridors are the three main landscape elements in which the Corniche fails, to a large extent, to satisfy people's demand. Simonds<sup>11</sup> notes that it is possible to create volumes that yield an experience of pleasure which is open to the sky, enclosed with foliage, and carpeted with turf. In the case of the Corniche the spaces are not comprehensively or artfully landscaped nor planned nor of a high design refinement to facilitate Saudi families.

Were the outdoor recreational volumes in the Corniche adequately suited to create the *sense of a place* in which to wander through sunlight and dappled shade, viewing sea beaches and sculptures through visual extensions from one space to another, from the narrow frame of plants to a wide panoramic expression. There were some abstract qualities or spatial characteristics of a series of varying volumes, each designed to induce a predetermined response. Simonds<sup>12</sup> has noted them as follows.

Tension and other social and physical problems will emerge if the designer does not respect the vernacular environment and how to formulate outdoor spatial and recreational volumes. For example, unstable forms, split composition, illogical complexities, wide ranges of values, a clash of colours or intense colours without relief, visual imbalance about a line or a point, no point at which the eye can rest, hard, polished, or jagged surfaces will all decrease visitors' satisfaction if not logically organised according to local and physical environment. Moreover the extreme exposure of different outdoor areas causes social tension. Those previous points can be easily spotted in many outdoor recreational areas in Saudi Arabia. So how can visitors' satisfaction be increased?

## HOW TO INCREASE VISITORS' SATISFACTION?

**V**ISITORS' SATISFACTION is a target which may never be achievable, because every individual of a society has his/her own distinct way of life, behaviour, background and social and demographic characteristics of, for example, education, age, social status and mental awareness. This does not mean however that the designer has the green light to express his thoughts, concepts and overall planning and design according to his own intentions or his desire. There are certain social, physical and environmental roles and principles to be included in every formulated urban open space.

At the top list of those principles is religion and local culture. Thereafter the environmental pattern must be designed to increase people's satisfaction. Relaxation and safety as well as privacy can be achieved by simply including soft and hard landscape elements formulated in harmony and balance with nature and framed by local culture. Volumes varying in size from the intimate to the infinite is another approach that will increase visitors satisfaction. Fitness of landscape spatial objects and materials with flowing lines, curvilinear forms and spaces, as well as the stability and sensitivity of landscape structure to be in pleasant and comfortable patterns, soft light and the soothing sound of fountains and sea waves, or landscape volumes might be infused with quiet colours, foliage and rocks with native plants and mounds that form secure enclosures within the Corniche areas.

By analysing Jeddah's Corniche's outdoor recreational areas we might encourage more visitors to pursue and spend their leisure time by ensuring that the overall outdoor recreational patterns are planned and designed according to updated landscape architectural techniques and by adhering to the nature of the environment. For example the Corniche might be enhanced and modified to include some of the following landscape principles:



## SOME LANDSCAPE PRINCIPLES

- ***Concept of Gaiety:*** the free spaces with smooth flowing forms and patterns, looping with adequate three dimensional barriers and volumes. The sense of moving from public to quiet areas of contemplation with appropriate scale and spaces mild and richly ornate, with the layout and physical structures to be formulated to suit Saudi families in a sense of being in isolation, privacy, detachment, security, and peace. Soft, diffused light and tranquil and recessive colours and a low muted stream of sounds.
- ***The concepts of dynamic action and of being able to participate in active and passive outdoor recreation without the limitation of facilities and areas.*** It is very important to provide in these outdoor recreational sites suitable sequences of movement. Pleasure and visitors' satisfaction will be increased by spaces, forms, textures, colours, symbols, sounds, light quality, and odours all suited to the use, whatever it may be. Satisfaction of anticipation, requirements, or desires. Sequences developed and fulfilled. Unity with variety. Harmonious relationships. A resultant quality of beauty in its true meaning of function produced beauty not beauty without function.<sup>13</sup>

The Corniche is, as mentioned before, 'make up' over the face of the city's urban fabric. Often make up does not last; even more too much make up can some times cause disgusting and exaggerated feelings of seeing what is in fact not real. The real thing is to create a natural make up of the cosmetics of local nature to formulate a functional layout has the specific positive function of producing healthier and more pleasurable outdoor recreational areas. This leads us to think to what degree should the problems identified earlier in chapter 6 or those mentioned throughout the text be solved with the site?

## **TO WHAT DEGREE SHOULD PROBLEMS BE SOLVED BY FUTURE PROVISION, BETTER DESIGN OR BETTER MANAGEMENT?**

**I**F we were to list the requisites of the ideal landscape concepts of solving or enhancing the overall outdoor recreational areas in Saudi Arabia for each of a series of varying recreational uses, we might be amazed at the variety of suggested spatial characteristics and at the degree of precision with which the characteristics can be defined. The environmental design studies vary and range from large scale, i.e. its whole nature, its ecological, biological, social, physical, demographic and the culture of its inhabitants. There are some landscape aspects that will solve some of the existing problems to a degree that will satisfy visitors and encourage them to visit more outdoor recreational areas.

How can the problems within a site be solved according to the flexibility of existing material? For example, an existing children's play area with limited opportunities can be designed as a dynamic wonderland of induced actions, intriguing forms, a rich variety of textures, and bright splashes of colour and sand. The area should be in sufficient sizes and be in various forms with tunnels, obstacles, movable objects, and contrasting things : sun to shadow, smooth to rough, bright to dull, open to closed, and high to low. "A well-designed play lot for a child is in itself a plaything, conducive to excitement and rollicking delight."<sup>14</sup> In other words how could designers comprehensively inventory social, physical and all related environmental planning and design strategies to solve the problems within the site? The designers should always bear in mind that their output is not for one individual of the society, nor is it for a mechanical man, it is for the family which is comprised of individuals. Those individuals have certain requirements to be fulfilled and reflected from the overall designed pattern. For example children need happy, healthy social play to attain their fullest development; young people require wholesome recreational opportunities to replace questionable

amusements which might lead to delinquency; workers need recreation during their leisure time in order to keep their spirits and production at high level; adult bachelors need opportunities that deviate them from bothering other's women by providing for them the most satisfaction that might be gained from their expanding leisure time; aged and disabled need opportunities to suit their limited physical ability and on-growing spare time. Furthermore privacy for women or for all individuals must be carefully thought of, and to be given enough consideration geared to the intentions of environmental designers to invent novel landscape design which is adequate and dynamic.

Adding to that the design layout must consider those people who play together, sing together or socialise in groups to achieve a sense of a community of feelings, co-operation and sharing outdoor recreational opportunities that help to preserve the local area.

Therefore how future problems of outdoor recreational provisions might be solved or better designed and managed? Or how to undertake a comprehensive social and environmental inquiry that covers each single landscape architectural concept of how to formulate the outdoor urban open spaces? On the other hand, people's way of life, the leisure time and leisure pattern, their cultural demands in traditional principles and values must not be overlooked by any means. The rapid growth of development and economy must not be performed at the expense of people's culture, especially in Muslim communities. This is because their life on this earth was given by the Almighty Allah to worship him, then to develop this environment to aid people to perform their religious duty in a simple, convenient and productive life. In other words the design of outdoor recreational areas is not an aim by itself; rather it is a procedure to help people repose, recreate and develop their physical, mental and environmental aspects to perform their full duty to their creator, praise to him.

Therefore in order to aid in solving some problems related to outdoor recreation provisions, all responsible environmental designers and decision makers must strictly base their actions to conform with local culture and its vernacular environment, as well as by utilising all available modern technology to be adapted -not copied blindly- to suit

local people, thus increasing their satisfaction and meeting their desires and demands within the frame of their religion boundary.

Therefore the existing policy of beautification of outdoor areas without comprehending or intending to be in function with people's needs, or cultural demand or overlooking the local environment is a mis directed approach that is against what actual Saudi landscape architecture should be. It is a significant approach that entertainment execution in Saudi Arabia has to be comprehensively utilised and fulfilled the stage of making inventories of supplies and surveys of demands, as well as to examine ways in which the data obtained from such inventories and inquiries could be used to deliberate a more accurate procedure to constitute comprehensively the planning purposes with the actual concepts of both vernacular culture and the environment of Saudi Arabia. In addition, designers should adhere their concepts to adequate and good integration of the geometrical shapes of squares, rectangles, circles and meaningful shapes that are adequately integrated to the social and environmental components of the locality. The plan of various outdoor recreation areas must be properly formed within the context of Islamic society. Finally, all previous questions must be borne in mind of those responsible to shape outdoor recreation provisions, especially how the existing pattern of Jeddah's Corniche facilitates the leisure pattern of Saudi families and how to create or apply design concepts that will solve, manage or lead to better planning and design.

The following chapter will illustrate how to answer the previous mentioned questions and comments about the validity of existing outdoor recreational sites of the Corniche and its problems. That will be achieved by studying the plans and designs, a questionnaire to determine the characteristics of the users' attitudes to provision, their level of satisfaction and to provide ideas for further improvement. Discussions of the a landscape architecture's assessment, observation methodology and questionnaire and its sampling cover and distribution are also included in the following chapter.

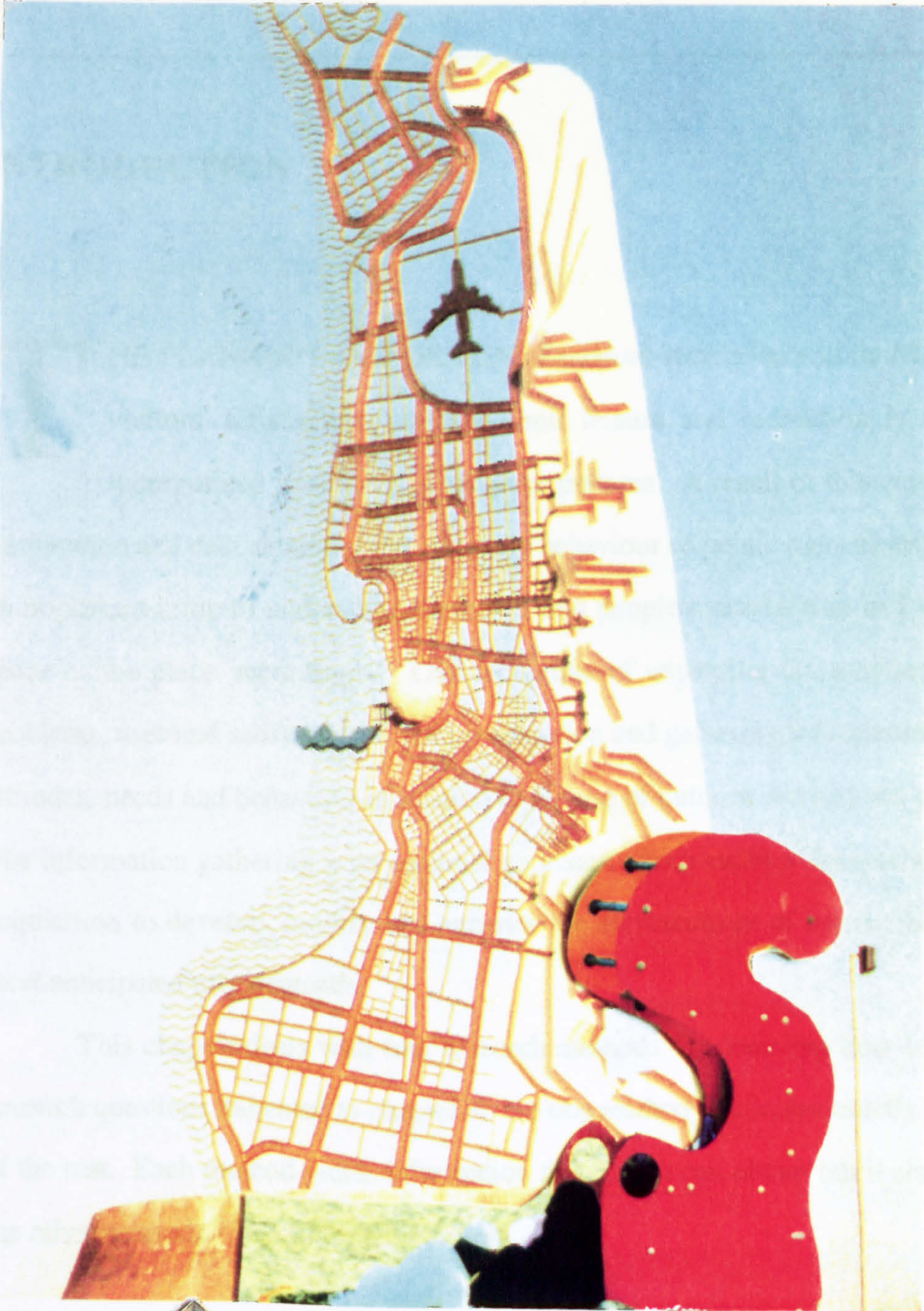
## Notes And References

---

- 1 Rutledge, A. (1971) Anatomy of a Park (New York: McGraw-Hill).
- 2 Pigram, J. (1983) Outdoor Recreation and Resource Management (New York: St, Martin's Press, Inc.)pp. 86-99
- 3 Chermayeff, S. and Alexander, C. (1963) Community and Privacy (New York: Anchor Books Doubleday & Company, Inc.),p.210
- 4 Ibid.
- 5 Ibid.,
- 6 The Holy Qura'n Text, translation and commentary ,Ali, A. Y.(1989) (Amana Corp., Brentwood, Mayland). Sura 54, verse 49
- 7 Ibid., Sura 51 verse 56.
- 8 Ibid., p.1429
- 9 Hakim, B.S. (1986) Arabic-Islamic City (London: KPI Ltd.), p.147
- 10 Al-Shehri, Abdullah Bin Ali. (1991) "A fight to Kill the time!" in: Al-Daawah magazine (in Arabic *Ma'rakah legatl Al-waggt*), No. 1315, Thursday, November, 7th, 1991)
- 11 Simonds, J. O. (1983) Landscape Architecture A manual of Site Planning and Design (New York: NcGraw-Hill Book Company, p.136
- 12 Ibid., p. 137
- 13 Ibid., p. 139
- 14 Ibid., p. 139

# CHAPTER 9

## Research Methods



# 9

## Research Methods

---

### INTRODUCTION

**T**HE PLANNING AND DESIGN of outdoor recreation and its relationship to visitors' satisfaction, use and their leisure and recreation is largely not incorporated in shaping open space patterns. A result of this was the lack of information and data about the use, need and behaviour of public recreational areas. It is an important issue to understand the needs and people's satisfaction to formulate the space or the place accordingly. One technique of exploring the existing or hidden problems, uses and satisfaction is the investigation and gathering information of visitor's attitudes, needs and behaviour in relation to the use of outdoor recreational open spaces. The information gathering is an essential approach which enables designers to facilitate acquisition to develop, modify and enhance the surroundings of human habitations to meet anticipated user demands.

This chapter deals with four research methods. It describes how to answer the research questions indicated in chapter 8. No one method duplicates exactly the function of the rest. Each method yields information that only it can obtain but it also reinforces the other methods.<sup>1</sup> The four methods are:

- 1• Study plans, designs, relevant reports, governmental documents and such like to determine design rationale and intentions,
- 2• A landscape architect's appraisal of the Corniche and its use, to explore the existing physical landscape environment and the ambient characteristics such as topography,

change of levels, climate, vegetation, space articulation, quality, aesthetics, density and noise.

- 3• Observation survey to determine type, intensity, and distribution of use, and
- 4• Questionnaire survey to determine characteristics of users, attitudes to provision, satisfaction of users; to canvas ideas for improvements and to determine whether existing problems might be solved by further provision, better design or better management.

## **THE MAIN OBJECTIVES OF THE FOUR RESEARCH METHODS**

**T**HE RESEARCH PROBLEM and the lack of information related to outdoor recreation in the Corniche of Jeddah persuade the researcher to choose the four mentioned research methods. The primary research methods used are the questionnaire and the site observation, which are useful tools in collecting behavioural data. The first method will be dealt with at length, but at the beginning it is preferable at this stage to give the reader the main objectives of the four research methods.

The first objective is to evaluate Jeddah's Corniche existing outdoor recreational open spaces in terms of design and use, by collecting manifestations of visitor's attitudes from their pattern of how they use the provided opportunities, and in terms of activities practiced and the way they occupy the space. The second objective is to appraise the type of recreational activities in which they most often participate or like to participate in, and to examine how well the site used according to designer's intention. The third objective is to examine the relationship between outdoor recreational sites and intensity of use in order to determine the outdoor recreational type most often used and why, so that similar or better design or management can be applied in under-used outdoor recreational areas. For example, different parts of the Corniche have been under used by families, particularly the southern parts of the Corniche. The reason might be because of habit of users, or due to inadequate landscape architectural design and its



accessibility. Another example, some conservative families may be deterred or detracted from using some parts of the Corniche as these do not provide adequate privacy for them, which does not respect traditional / cultural / religious considerations.

While there are other issues and objectives of outdoor-related recreational activities noted in the study area such as its structure, material used and its durability and how to protect the Corniche from wave actions- lack of time, finance and resources limited the study to being concerned with the Corniche area in general, with more emphasis on the degree of privacy for women, social interactions, encouragement, responding to climatic factors, children's safety, adequacy of open spaces for families, and respondent's satisfaction in relation to family respondents to trouble caused by bachelors, and the general pattern and design of the recreation sites.

## **CONDUCTING THE FOUR RESEARCH METHODS**

**T**HE LACK OF LANDSCAPE ARCHITECTURAL POLICIES based on local objective research is felt to be particularly important and should be conducted in the light of personal assessment in the form of surveying and investigation.

Landscape architect's appraisals and initiated field observations and a questionnaire survey of Jeddah's Corniche recreational habits and the activities of participants was conducted to identify specific cultural and environmental use that affect peoples' attitudes and behaviour during leisure time outdoor recreational activities.

Conducting research of Jeddah's Corniche was chosen by the author on the basis of exploratory field observations at the study area. The main points to be surveyed are the leisure pattern, peoples' attitudes and behaviour that reflect the needs for privacy, and the satisfaction of respondents in terms of the general layout of the existing physical landscape setting. This will include privacy satisfaction for women from other adjacent recreational sites, privacy from passers by, views into adjacent areas, size of sitting area, safety and security for both women and children, noise and other related considerations.

## STUDYING PLANS AND DESIGNS FOR OUTDOOR RECREATION

**T**HE EXISTING PLANS AND DESIGNS for the Corniche did not, to a large extent, cover in detail a wide variety of design stages, scale and complexity of outdoor recreational concepts. This is due to many political, economical and technical reasons. The Corniche was planned and designed without undertaking adequate drawing and full documented and construction papers or plans (a complete set of a landscape architectural working drawings and reports of a project). Construction, paving asphalt and reclamation and planning have been implemented on site. Most of the existing maps lack the logical sequence of planning and design stages. It is obvious that each project must have a detailed map showing the existing nature of the site, a map about potential and constraints, concepts, overall map, detailed construction maps, maintenance and so forth. But the studying of many exiting plans revealed large scales, without a landscape design-scale working and detailed plans for outdoor recreation did not include environmental studies, land-use planning and resource management for aspects such as watershed management and recreation planning and management and urban expansion policies.

A first glance at the plans for Jeddah's Corniche recreational projects gives the impression that many plans were almost virtuesless. The layouts were formulated from shapes with many lamp posts and a tremendous number of sculptures scattered on main traffic roundabouts. It is evident that many of the outdoor plans were designed by non-professional landscape architects. How can a carpenter undertake a heart surgery? This is the impression of any well-qualified landscape architect examining the existing outdoor recreational project relating open spaces. For example Jeddah's Corniche's promenade seaside recreational areas were planned with no consideration for the geographical, natural or human phenomena of the area, which resulted in producing concepts that create conflicts and not a workable environment. Those projects were often undertaken after a random-decision to allocate vacant land as open space but the

density, layout, and appropriate design of that use are not comprehensively determined. This is because the study was not involved with searching the environment both for features and situations that would facilitate the proposed land use and for those that would represent drawbacks or threats. "The objective of discovery of opportunities and constraints methodology is to find the potential matches and mismatches between land use and environment and recommend the most appropriate relationship between the two."<sup>2</sup>

In studying any outdoor recreational area, certain criteria must be borne in mind to evaluate and judge the success of the site. For example, how the plan setting is able to satisfy and support explicit and implicit visitor needs and traditional, cultural and religious values. Each layout must accommodate certain functions. How the spaces are integrated, distribution of facilities, spatial, physical structures, space articulation and organisation. How the plan will protect users from danger of circulation and preserve obligatory degree of their safety and privacy. The three-dimensional volumetric of space, for example, function of vertical enclosure will induce visitor response depends on the type and degree of enclosure. "Vertical space enframers are not usually seen from within the volume alone but in the round as well. They, together with the spaces they enclose, become in total a unified landscape element to be related to all other landscape features."<sup>3</sup> The use of area with the visual control while providing pleasant outdoor recreational areas was the focal point of studying plans. This is because plan determines the use and visual contact, corridors and privacy. In addition, the base plane, surface material, patterns, colours, sand, turf, deck, parking, pavements, plants are all important elements affecting the use of space.

After evaluating the existing outdoor recreation areas of Jeddah's Corniche the researcher found that there were no detailed and complete set of landscape plans (construction plans). Most plans were designed on a large scale which made it very difficult to differentiate or recognise certain uses of some areas or sufficient detailed construction working plans. The plan showed only the main traffic roads, land use and public outdoor recreational areas, which were often located on master plans only by their *green colour*.

The overall plans and designs of many outdoor recreational areas lack a landscape concept. This is despite the fact that "The first step in renewing an urban landscape is the formation of a concept. It will be described as a landscape concept because the word landscape describes a good outdoor space bounded by earth, water, sky, buildings and vegetation."<sup>4</sup> "Today we normally begin by parcelling out building sites, and whatever is left over is turned into streets and plazas . . . conceiving the space is a different enterprise from conceiving the elements which contain the space. Aesthetic order can be established by urban design, directed towards the creation of outdoor space."<sup>5</sup>

The studying plans and designs for outdoor recreation in Jeddah's Corniche reflects the need to re-design the layout in a manner to maintain privacy for users, and conflicts-free between traffic and pedestrians. Landscape characters are varies between separating the site from adjacent areas by using landscape materials of, for example, trees, hedges, screens, order of spaces and their hierarchies. The spaces did not offer what family needs. Privacy, security and being in enjoyable place not *fast sitting areas for commercial purposes*.

Views are towards visitors, sea and other landscape structures. In fact, the Corniche can be considered as a negative outdoor area which encourages people to stare at others' women or passers by.

Accessibility and circulation are from every where. The needs to regulate, order and zone different areas for different functions. Most of the site paved with tiles with planters located in the middle of the sidewalk. The sites were poorly managed.

The design of Jeddah's Corniche lacks the appropriate shaping of layout to facilitate local cultural needs. "Ladies were the dominant type of users followed by children and men. This result is influenced by the congregation of ladies which in fact is culturally unpopular and unanticipated. They were non-Saudis. The only Saudi women observed in the site was veiled, embarrassed and eager to leave the site."<sup>6</sup> From studying the plans of the Corniche, the layout, spatial structure and volumetric space and places were not adequately designed to maintain privacy and to prevent social tensions. For example, the outdoor recreational sites and sitting areas were exposed to each other.

This plans need space and volumetric articulation of spaces and places to facilitate each individual and group needs. The men in this area can gaze at passing or other ladies' areas. The sites were extremely open and there is a need to preserve privacy for families. In addition, the furniture of the site is fixed and cannot be manipulated by users to form protected territories.

The Corniche occupies a long linear strip of the seaside. planted mainly with rows of trees. No facilities or play equipment are provided except privately operated fun fairs. The layout of the whole reveals the design was not as a linear outdoor recreational sites. It looks more like a ribbon of traffic road with identical rows of trees, in which the land is extensively exploited. The land is ragged (not pure sandy structures) and most of the trees are connected by irrigation ditches. Benches and picnic tables are in need of being organised according to the people's use. They are in very bad conditions. The sites also need more outdoor recreational opportunities and facilities. In fact, the site must be re-designed to achieve a tangible notions of adequately develop outdoor recreation open space. "A huge sum of money was spent on futile plantings which require a lot of maintenance and irrigation efforts. The waste is not only on the huge number of trees, but also on hundreds of benches and picnic tables which are not required and not used in such places or by such a culture."<sup>7</sup>

In short, the study of the landscape features of this site demonstrates the need for more coherent and substantial landscape architectural approach. The use of the site must encourage families needs with appropriate outdoor recreation opportunities not farm's layout. The Corniche is extremely open in which the family privacy cannot be maintained. The land must not be unduly channelled and ragged which will impede the movement and the use by people.

Trees and shrubs are in need to be re-organised or planted according to orientation and to form shaded and well articulated and group plantations. The planting techniques need more consideration to basic landscape design principles such as the distance between each tree or shrub and how to use the planting hierarchies to soothing the appearance of the spaces to suit each function and different use of outdoor areas.

In fact, the Corniche site needs more special facilities or activity programmes to employ and respond to the users' requirements. The Corniche needs special arrangements to avoid the absurd and fragmented geometrical shapes which do not serve an obvious purpose except their appearance on the plan.

In determining the design rationale or intentions for north Corniche, it may be seen that the whole site has been planned to facilitate traffic circulation, rather than to accommodate people's outdoor recreational patterns. First of all, the total open space that was left between the traffic roads and sea edges was very narrow, sometimes less than 5 metres, while the minimum clear space between traffic roads and beach must be no less than 30 to 50 metres.

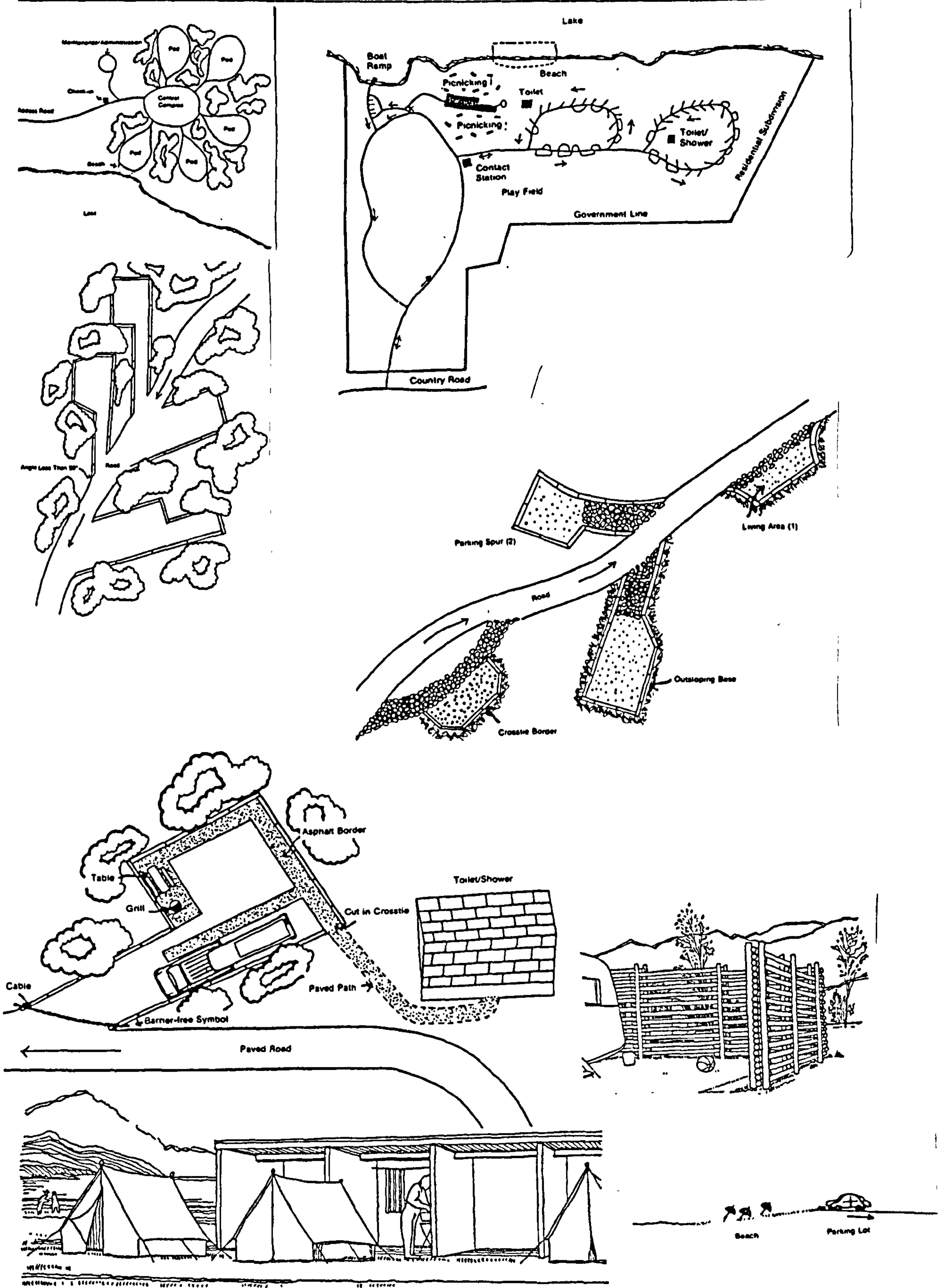
The narrow areas between the traffic roads and the intended areas for outdoor recreation cause many social and physical conflicts. Conflicts between automobiles and recreationists, between pedestrian and those who sit on the side pavements, and above all those poorly located and adjacent areas which cause visual contact and visual, so that it is possible to see and intrude upon others privacy. The exposure of family areas and their critical positioning next to traffic movements causes danger for children.

The plan must consider how to formulate spaces according to people's needs. If we give a plain open space to be designed, there are numerous possible concepts, shapes and layouts. Each designated area must have a purpose, function and to be designed to facilitate people not their cars or for beautification only. For example, the plan of the Corniche is nothing in terms of landscape design. It is only pavements created to frame open space, with scattered trees and rocks.

The other issues not considered this kind of planning the design values were dictated by artistic conventions that lacked the underlying basis of the nature and function inherent in the vernacular landscape, nor did they reflect the sense of being on natural sea beaches away from man-made patterns. In fact the researcher felt that there is a need to establish landscape design criteria and to emphasise the functional and the three-dimensional volumes which must be based on the precepts of the family's demands and environmental awareness. The overall design causes isolation between the outdoor

recreational pattern and the processes of nature where the layout is not in harmony with the environment as a whole.

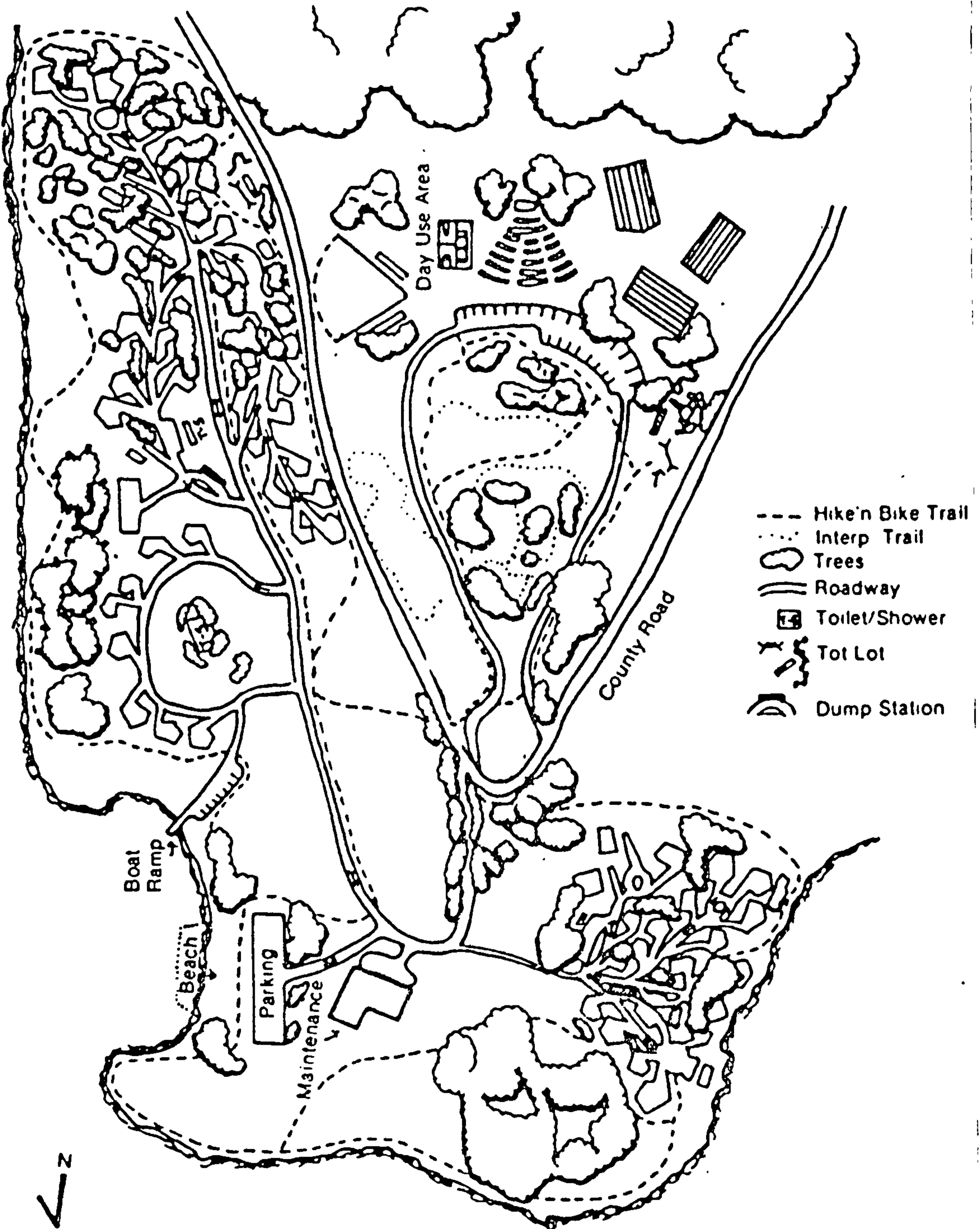
The planning of the Corniche road to be adjacent, critically, to the sea-space causes shortages of adequate areas for recreational space. From the researcher's point of view, a sense of frustration might result due to the lack of convenient wide and natural open spaces that suit each member of the society. Streets are the focus of intensive social interaction and play by adults and children. Accordingly their location and design must thoughtfully respect those who will use them. But what has actually happened is that there are many valuable urban or sea-side areas which were consumed by the traffic roads and left no spaces for social enjoyment. The tendency to use streets as social spaces is spontaneous and natural and they function as a focus rather than as a separator of social activity.<sup>8</sup> Figures 9.1A and 9.1B are good examples of sea-side outdoor recreation areas. They show a hierarchy of spaces, privacy for families, certain areas for different purposes and time-zoned spaces.



Simple shelters give protection to campers and also screen the site (National Trust for Scotland).

**FIGURE 9.1 A** An illustration of a good example of a sea-side outdoor recreation area showing a hierarchy of spaces, privacy for families, certain areas for different purposes and zone-time spaces





**FIGURE 9.1 B** An illustration of a well-designed sea-side outdoor recreation area showing a hierarchy of spaces, privacy for families, certain areas for different purposes and zone-time spaces<sup>9</sup>

The previous figures (9.1A and 9.1B) show how a landscape architect might manipulate the open spaces to accommodate almost every section of society and meet their demands and desires. The overall site consists of the main loop of a traffic road that is extracted from the main circulation. Then there is a second hierarchy of service roads with some loops or '*cul de sac*' patterns that allows each family to have their own territory for recreation, camping and swimming. The whole site is enclosed by trees and bounded by sea edges. This is an ideal design that provides multi-functional opportunities. In comparing it to the Corniche, very large differences can be easily noticed. In Corniche site the perception of space use imposed fixed uses and inflexible moulds on the visitors' environments. The official designation of the Corniche was for roads and not for people. People made a deliberate choice to use the street so the design of it must be adequate to facilitate their needs because having vehicles adjacent to peoples' areas causes an alteration to human behaviour. While the good example of figure 9.1A illustrates how the overall pattern provides a inventory and description of the features and resources of sea based activities, the Corniche area misses that. In fact figure 9.1B illustrates how a good plan might look. For example, goals have been formulated in relation to land use, with a physical plan that shows the recommended locations, configuration and interrelationships between different areas. In fact the site planning encompasses the formulation of plans for specific sites, for which a use or development program might be designed. Adding to that the process of formulating the overall pattern is intended to yield a physical plan in which natural features, automobiles and pedestrian circulation, outdoor facilities and landscaping are addressed in an integrated framework. The Corniche is in need of such an approach.

The other observation about the beach of the Corniche is that its narrow and linear areas limit and discourage the latent demand for more active and safe outdoor recreation. Figure 9.2 illustrates the poor designing and alignment of rocks which causes dangers and hinders some visitors. The layout of the open sandy-rugged open space was not used efficiently because once a family or group of bachelors use it, others cannot. Therefore there is a need to equally distribute sandy beaches all over the Corniche sea edges to allow maximum use of the natural sea areas /sandy beaches.



**FIGURE 9.2** *The location, distribution and sea-edge defence system was not adequately designed and limits the chance of many people to enjoy and share equally in the opportunities of participation in an outdoor sea-escape environment. Therefore the need for more sandy beaches, fairly distributed in adequate sizes and form, would encourage many visitors to spend more of their leisure time at these locations*

The above figure (9.2) is an example of a type of use, pattern of site and lack of adequate management and maintenance. The sandy open space left for use by the public, the lack of clear smooth sandy dunes and the eyesore of some existing scrappy boats needs more attention from the authorities. In the picture above for example there are many landscape solutions which could be used to enhance this situation. Clearing, for instance, and increasing the width and the size of the place. This could be done by importing sand from the abundance of sand dunes near by, or from extracting sea-sand from the sea ground itself. Implications of this for dune, beach stability would need to be considered.

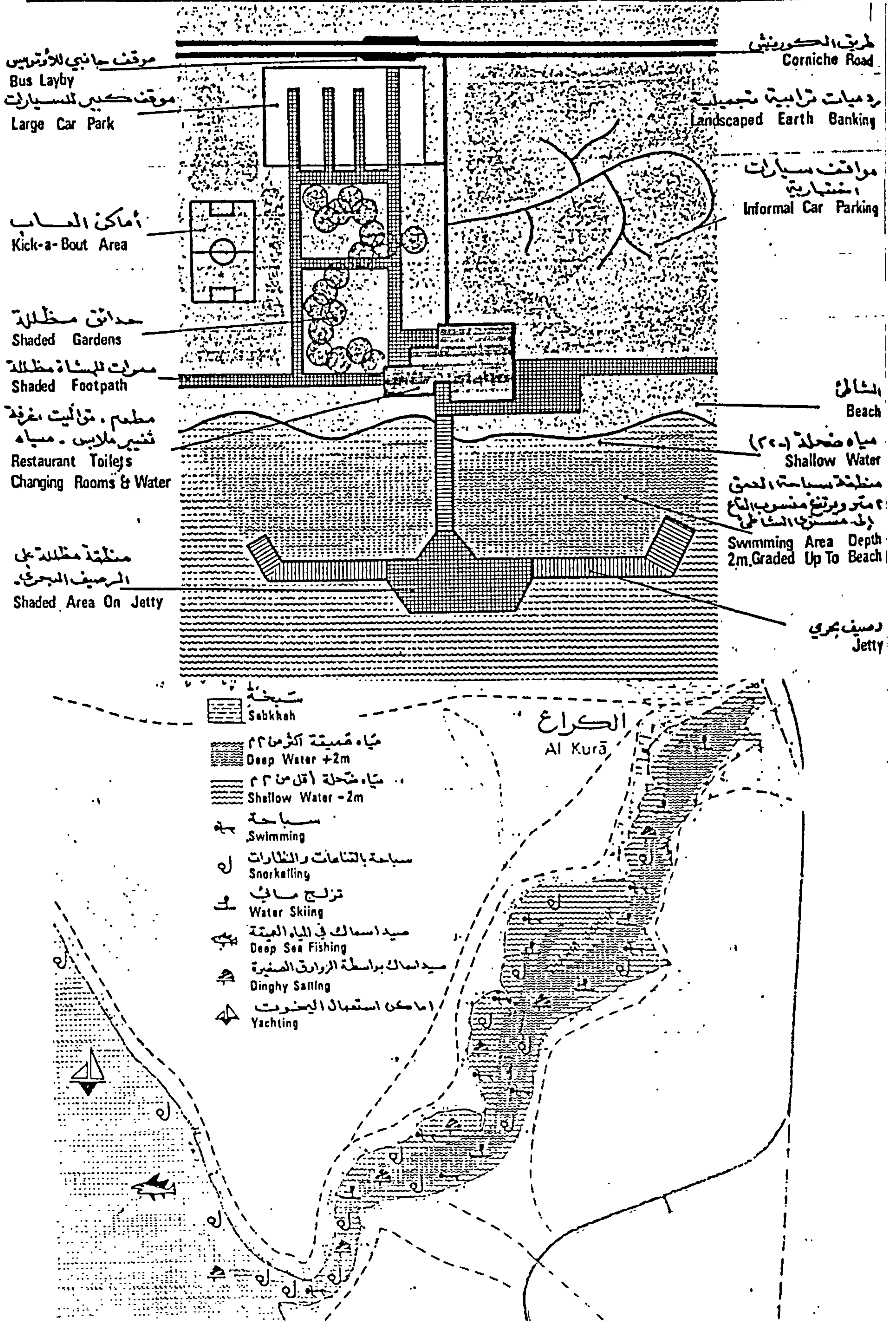


FIGURE 9.3 An illustrative plan showing how the existing policy makers shape open spaces and recreational facilities in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia<sup>10</sup>

The previous figure (9.3) illustrates the existing planning techniques used to shape outdoor recreational areas. The overall pattern is mainly composed of fragmented squares and rectangles. There is no attempt to shape in response to comprehensive social, physical and environmental design requirements. This is a very primitive layout which misses the basic principles of landscape architecture involving how to shape the areas according to environmental considerations and people's demands. In short, this kind of planning approach was not based on how, "To establish the relative importance of various socio - economic characteristics as 'determinants' of recreation behaviour."<sup>11</sup>

That is to say, the designers failed to provide for the essential human demands such as relaxation, entertainment and a means for personal and social development. It is not appropriate to limit the motive of users to fulfil his or her latent demand as when for example, a person cannot participate in active recreation, rather he or she must merely fill in time by sitting, chatting or watching television and guarding the children. Few recreation pursuits can be performed in such a layout.

The Corniche mainly serves as a traffic sea-side road for pleasure, for the use of peddlers and as a side walk, sometimes in front of family areas. There are no design criteria for the Corniche. The overall planning and design has been undertaken 'on the site', without any previous design plans. The physical and spatial layout of various outdoor plans were not capable to accommodate the leisure pattern of a typical Saudi family, and the lack of various adequately integrated open spaces and facilities will deter many families from using those outdoor open spaces, especially women as they cannot walk, swim or participate in active sea-based recreational areas. The study of some outdoor recreational plans reflects that the outdoor recreational provision was formed outside the context of the Islamic society, where it discourages social contact with other people, does not allow for the separation of family areas from bachelors spaces, and can not maintain an adequate level of privacy, safety and not to harm or cause harm to the nature of people and the nature of the sea-space environment.

## **LANDSCAPE ARCHITECTS' APPRAISAL**

The previous landscape architects' appraisal evaluate and explores the nature of the outdoor recreational provision. In order to answer the questions of chapter 8 about the overall recreational pattern it is very important to have a conventional approach to design appraisal by a professional critic, to assesses a particular outdoor setting, drawing upon insights obtained through perceptual processes particularly to designed open space. The appraisal will often focus on the physical structure and visual attributes of the setting to reveal the quality of the design and management.

In regard to assessing landscape character, the Corniche ought to be planned and designed with more consideration to its distance from the sea line. The Corniche must be wide enough to accommodate various types of outdoor recreational opportunities. There is no pure and thick sand beach, which allow visitors to enjoy the use of beach, for sun bathing, playing volleyball, football and such a like.

Attractiveness of the Corniche must be thoughtfully planned and designed. Although there are many sculptures and lamp posts scattered all over the Corniche but what are the function of assembling too many sculptures in one site. This might cause some people to argue about them. A sculpture must be allocated in particular site for purpose. This purpose might be to give an identity to the place, to be recognised, to recall its historical event. Sculptures of the Corniche were beautiful and richly decorated, but these sculptures must be distributed along the Corniche for a purpose.

Visual and human interest must, also, be considered in forming and distribute of outdoor recreational sites. The artificial lakes and the panorama of the sea views must be carefully designed. "Streams and water bodies are the punctuation marks in the reading of the landscape."<sup>12</sup> The sea-line must be articulated and give essential meaning.

In addition, planted landscape of Corniche must be involved in land planning. The plant establish the site character. They hold the soils, modify the climate, provide windbreak and screen, and often define the conformation of use areas. The planting of the Corniche was not carefully considered how, for example, a single inappropriate plant can alter or

destroy the visual quality of a landscape or disrupt its ecological balance. Good planted landscape can change dull and barren site into a more useful, comfortable, and pleasant place to be. Each and every plant installed should serve a predetermined purpose. It is to be selected as the best to suit the design. The plantation of the Corniche are in need for re-planting layout. The aim is to enhance in all possible ways the circulation movement and the usable areas of the site. Each group of plants or even a plant must be selected to serve its intended function. The plantation of the Corniche needs to be grouped to simulate natural stands. As a rule, regular spacing or geometric patterns are to be avoided. Trees in rows or grids are best reserved for limited urban situations where a civic or monumental character is desired. In addition, the plantation of Corniche needs to be grouped logically so their canopy provide shade and spatial roof or ceiling "outdoor rooms".

In regard to space structure, planting manner needs to be install an intermediate trees for under-story screening, windbreak and visual interest. Plants are the enframers, particularly suited to the subdivision and hierarchy of the whole Corniche into smaller use areas and spaces. So each group or family can claim their right of contemporary private space in public domains. In fact, the Corniche needs to be articulated or sequential opening and closing and increasing or decreasing the height, density, and width of the planting along the routs to give added richness and power to the landscape.

A conceal parking, storage, and other services or eyesore views must be screened by using trees, hedges, mounding, walls, or fencing to provide visual control. The need to install screened layout and variety of landscape materials to hide unpleasant views, eliminate glare, reduce noise levels and provide privacy and secure areas.

In terms of design style, there is also need to provide evolving sequences of space (space articulation) to enclose and link the various site use areas. Each functional space has its own requirements of openness or containment as it relates to other spaces and the landscape environs. The use of plants as space definers must be considered thoughtfully in every segment of the Corniche. The plants, mounds, walls, fences, rock or any suitable landscape materials are admirably suited to enclose, subdivide, and

articulate the various functional spaces of the site and the pedestrian and traffic that connect them.

The Corniche is accessible from many main streets such as Al-Tahliah, Corniche Road, and King Fahad Road. The overall patterns suggests that there is a need for more coherent policies for outdoor recreational design, that allow and facilitate safe areas for the users, especially for women. On the other hand there is also a need for a selective approach to each outdoor recreational site within the content of an over-all system of the Corniche, i.e. integration and unity. The evidence from this appraisal strongly supported the view that the needs of the Saudi family can be catered for by increasing outdoor recreational opportunities, in a adequate design and location together with an integrated increased range of outdoor recreational facilities and services, which suits each individual.

The physical appearance and functional outdoor recreational opportunities are a very important factor in attracting users of all ages and types, and the need to conserve and enhance the visual appeal and prevent visual contact (privacy intrusion) should be a key objective of policy. Landscape architects' appraisal is the approach to explicit and implicit visitors' needs and values.

## OBSERVATION METHOD

**O**BSERVATION is a widely used method in investigating human behaviour. Observing people's behaviour means systematically watching them how they use their environment looking for clues to explain why certain behaviour has taken place in certain manners or patterns. Observation is also used to determine the number of people, spatial and temporal distributions, activities, management, length of stay. It is a method to assess, explore which activities occur at what time, and to find clues to help in understanding certain behaviours, then relate them to the planning and design of the place.



The data collected by the observation survey will be extracted from people's action and behaviour. Each act of behaviour raises the question why this particular pattern of action took place in this manner and location.

The methodology of this research's observation will start from observing general tendencies of behaviour to their original stimuli. For instance, some religious and traditional principles influence peoples' attitudes and behaviour. Where some women tend to gather in certain patterns and at a distance away from others.

"When you observe behaviour, you soon become aware of repetitive activities in identifiable places- what Barker calls "standing patterns of behaviour" Place-specific activities within such a pattern are more closely related to one another than to patterns of activities in other places. In different socio-cultural and physical settings the same behaviour can have different design implications."<sup>13</sup> The main elements in environmental behaviour observation, as mentioned by Zeisel <sup>14</sup> can be listed as follows:

- Who is?..... (Actor)
- doing what.....(Act)
- with whom.....(Significant others)
- in what relationship?.....(Relationships)
  - aural, visual
  - tactile,
  - olfactory,
  - symbolic.
- in what context?.....(Socio-cultural context)
  - situation
  - culture
- and where?.....(Physical setting)
  - props , spatial, and relations.

"It is particularly important to record cultural contexts for behaviour when you carry out observational studies in another country, in ethnic neighbourhoods, or in parts of your own country with strong regional differences. Otherwise, designers using your data will be making decisions irrelevant to users."<sup>15</sup> Accordingly it is very important for planning and design for Muslims' projects to be constructed after a filtration process

throughout their traditions, religious and vernacular environment. The observation of the existing outdoor recreational patterns were as follows.

- Circulation: pedestrian movements
- Design of the site.
- Use of space by visitors
- Does the design of the site encourage group interaction or cause isolation and disconnect social interaction, and why?

### **PHYSICAL AND SPATIAL CHARACTERISTICS AND PHYSICAL BARRIERS OF THE OUTDOOR RECREATIONAL SITE**

**D**EGREE OF ADEQUATE PHYSICAL DISTANCE between physical objects; that give a sense of maximum visual privacy, a sense of visual separation between the male section and the women's domain must be maintained in all spatial and physical structures of the site . Does the site(s) maintain a placatory degree of limiting visibility among pedestrians, sitting areas, commercial places, and recreational areas. The visual corridor that connects between different recreational sites; how far does it maintain a sense of privacy? In a park, for example, an observer sees a child playing, watched by her mother, who anxiously jumps up every time the child moves out of her sight. The child's being hidden from view triggers a reaction from her mother. This event tells an observer something about the child's activity and the importance for the relationship of maintaining a visual link between mother and child.<sup>16</sup>

Zeisel has recommended a very useful method of how to undertake an observation survey, especially about behaviour. He defined behaviour as what "people do, including thinking, feeling, and seeing, as well as talking with others and moving around." Then he wrote his book *"Inquiry by Design: Tools for Environmental - Behaviour Research"* which focuses on how to find out how people behave in reaction to the environment. The observation is how to look at phenomena connected to a problem by whatever means necessary: looking with one's eyes, asking oral questions (for example, why you do this? why your family grouped facing each other), using

mechanical measurement devices or taking photos or a video to records certain actions or behaviour that reflect something. How do people use open outdoor recreational spaces? How do you provided outdoor recreational areas that relate to these people?

All the previous questions were intended to show the reader the importance of observation as a tool to answer the research's questions. Therefore the observation survey was undertaken by the researcher during the summer of 1989.

## THE BASIS OF OBSERVATION SURVEY

**T**HIS WAS UNDERTAKEN in order to observe people's behaviour and find clues to explain some inquiries or questions related to their behaviour and their actions and leisure pattern. The observation system consists of three elements: the observer; the people being observed, and the environment where the action is taking place. Since observation involves, humans the validity of the observation could be questioned. The observer will be selective in what features and events need to be observed. It is difficult to observe everybody or everything that is going on. Preconceived ideas or the background about what is going on might affect the result of the observation. Accordingly the observer should be unbiased. There are various observation methods which help the observer to record. Freezing an action (by photos) or by timing (this lapse photography or time-lapse filming) and video all are helpful methods. For example, a typical time-lapse filming set-up with a digital clock. The clock will later prove very useful in the difficult job of evaluation, providing a place mark.

Behaviour settings or the activities and actions of people are many and diverse and each action reflects something about the reason for that action or attitude; hence focusing on special behavioural settings is necessary. In observation, some behavioural patterns are clear and outstanding and repeat themselves at frequent periods in some defined environment.

The observer notes the time, weather, environment, people type and gender, activities, locations and movements. The researcher on the basis of the previously

mentioned points has conducted a general observation during the distribution of the questionnaire formats by taking photos to know why people behave or react in this or that way. Although observing or taking photographs can be an invasion of privacy. This is a problem in documentary photography, and a good rule is not to show publicly people in embarrassing or compromising situations. For research footage, everything is a fair subject.<sup>17</sup> But the researcher never to intrude on a situation that is truly private, or should be: a couple in an argument, a person playing with his family, especially women. The other problem of undertaking observation or taking photographs is safety. Some visitors object strenuously to being photographed: in particular conservative families. They do not like to have their picture taken nor to watch them, and some time the researcher have been threaten. In spite of that, the observation was carried out starting from the North Corniche.

The North Corniche, especially Shorm Abhor, was very crowded during weekends and late evening times. Due to the narrow and linear beaches of the southern part of the creek, this site was very often occupied by men with some families protecting themselves with tents, cars or whatever vertical things that could be erected (Figure 9.4).



**FIGURE 9.4** *The leisure pattern of Shorm Abhor. Note the density and how visitors use the space*

The previous photograph also illustrates how people's behaviour reflects their needs for more privacy and shelter. There is a range of children's play equipment distributed around. Some rocks were arranged along the sea shore to reduce or prevent erosion. Those rocks were mainly intended by designers for sea-defence purpose. But it has been observed that people use them for fishing and standing or use them as enclosed areas where ladies can reach the sea water. The activities and actions of people are many and diverse, so it is necessary to focus on special behavioural settings. In observation some behavioural patterns are clear, outstanding and repeat themselves at frequent periods in some defined environment.

The observation was taken at Corniche area on the basis of intervals of time, the presence and number of people, grouped by their kind and the activity in which they are engaged, in various locations in the place.

## AREAS OF OBSERVATION

**T**HE CORNICHE is very long linear park, therefore, it is necessary to select spaces on the basis of even intervals and the samples should have certain characters such as location, adjacent land use, design and maintenance. After visually examining the Corniche, the researcher notes that it is very difficult to keep consistent intervals of selecting different or distant areas. This is because the sensitivity of watching people and take photography of them. This persuade the researcher to take some photographs without permission of people (by using telephoto lenses). Accordingly, the areas of observation were selected along the Corniche on the basis of taking photographs for certain manners of how people use the site and their pattern of grouping, sitting, adjacent to road and how they use outdoor recreational facilities.

In order to prepare plans for the Corniche segments, the researcher visited the municipality in the summer of 1989 to gather information and maps. But no appropriate detailed maps were found because most of the open spaces had been built without plans or by companies which left the country leaving no original plans with the municipality.<sup>18</sup>

Although there are some areas along the whole Corniche which were intended for children's use only such as in the North Corniche next in front of Al-Sanabel's roundabout, the intersection of Sari Street with the Corniche and in Shorm Abhor, cars were observed in many of Corniche areas entering through broken pavements or over the pavements. Cars were sometimes observed being driven to the nearest point to the sea where the visitors were unloaded their picnic food and equipment. People were usually observed sitting very close to their cars, and women were grouped facing each other or in patterns reflecting their needs for privacy. Some people were observed as they sat on a mat and used their cars to create enclosures or 'walled' spaces against others' eyes. Some visitors also sat near their van. The side door of the van was open and they were observed sitting both inside the van and outside very close to it. Those patterns were capable of providing them with some sort of privacy and personal and territorial space.

Another location along the Corniche road, was often used by several families, bachelors and peddlers. Some families were sitting. The distance between them varied, with families looking mainly for shaded areas. Their cars were normally sited close to them for privacy. It was also observed that when a family comes to use a site on the Corniche they often sit at a certain distance from other family(s). This is the visual distance, or visual corridor, with each family trying to keep an adequate distance from each other. For example, the distance between two families sitting on the side pavements varies between 20 and 30 metres. This distance is large enough for one family not to be able to see clearly the other family. If the distance becomes shorter as the place becomes more densely used, some families would either leave the site, erect vertical screens, or look for another place.

Another annoying thing that bothers families is the presence of bachelors in family domain areas. It is seen that some women cannot leave their cars. Instead they stay in the cars and allow their children to play with their maidens (Figure 9.5.). This phenomenon has been observed along several locations on the Corniche.



**FIGURE 9.5** *This picture illustrates why Saudi women (inside the car) can not leave their car because of the presence of bachelors watching the sea and the maidens playing with Saudi's children.*

Another common observable attitude in using the Corniche pavements is when visitors especially women, sit and occupy almost half of the pavement width while pedestrians and peddlers (salesman) were passing in front of them. This causes disturbance and might cause pain to women sitting on the pavement because this behaviour is direct privacy intrusion as well as personal and territorial space invasion. It is the mistake, which until now, has been repeated in outdoor recreational areas all over the Corniche. The researcher observed this problems all over many outdoor recreational sites which repeated in the planning and design of outdoor recreational areas. The North Corniche, especially, Shorm Abhor area was the most heavily used. It is very difficult to count the number of visitors; although visually the site was very crowded, where many families sat very near to each other. This close distance between families causes privacy problems, limits the activities and causes individuals and families to group close to each other. This pattern of congested areas affect visitors' leisure pattern. Some of them (women) were confined to passive recreation such as chatting or playing cards or watching television. Others (men) were able to swim, play volleyball or football. This

area of North Corniche was very heavily used because it is the only sandy beach that is easy to reach , other areas exist but they are very far away (more than 40 km. from North of Jeddah).

Another problem that was observed in the Corniche area was that of noise, especially during the night or at late evening times, with the sound of mobile shops, which park near or adjacent to family areas.

In evaluating the previous observation notes, it was felt that the Corniche is a famous recreational open space in Jeddah. This area attracts people, especially the part of the Corniche which contains fun-fairs and the one which is very accessible from nearby densely populated neighbourhoods like *Al-Rwais*, *Al-Bughdadeyyah* and *Al-Sabiel*. The largest number of people observed on the site was on Wednesday afternoon, followed by Thursday and Friday. Wednesday night is the beginning of the weekend (like Friday in the UK) and hosted a large number of people.

The Corniche areas attracted a large number of visitors who were observed practicing different activities like swimming, playing, fishing, picnicking, sitting, water skiing, snorkelling, sitting in boats and some limited sea-based outdoor recreational activities. The main feature in the site which acts as a magnet to visitors is the sea which activities attracted more participants than the children's play areas. In terms of the type of users, men were often found participating in active rather than passive recreation. No children were observed alone on the sites, because families were usually picnicking or visiting outdoor recreational areas and accompanying children playing in the playground.

If people cannot drive their cars to the nearest point to the sea edge, some visitors use children's play equipment to provide them with shade, support for their backs, and the screen that will provide them with some feeling of being in private territorial space. Again this is another point where the site was not used as designers intended in the first place. This is because adults bachelors or maiden females were observed playing on the children's play equipment like swings. This is inappropriate behaviour especially from ladies in a conservative society. It is not a matter of playing on the play equipment but a matter of the way they should behave in public areas. This also indicates special needs for a special category or design that is intended to facilitate and accommodate women's



needs and their leisure pattern away from other intruders. More secluded areas are preferable. This is why some people prefer to go to remote areas where women can go jogging, swim or play, free from any physical or social constraints. It is the responsibility of the environmental designer to provide adequate outdoor recreational areas that suit a typical Saudi family, particularly the over-looked women's use of public open spaces in the Kingdom.

There are also no essential facilities like water, toilets, garbage bins and appropriate sitting areas, with a view to where and how people sit and organise themselves in the space. This is because the existing concentrated use of the Corniche areas were mainly in the spaces around the mosques or within courtyards (Figure 9.6). In fact, the researcher has observed that those mosques were very crowded with visitors because those mosques provide visitors with the important services and facilities such as water, praying areas, toilets, shade, electricity and above all it gives them the sense of being with the Almighty Allah, in secure and safe place. The greatest enjoyment, from an Islamic point of view, is when a Muslim feels that he or she is sitting in God's house.

Another observed phenomenon represents the intentions of women to reach the sea or the wish to swim in its water when some ladies and their children enjoying the sea. The lack of suitable areas and the presence of bachelors often hindered their movement and limited their opportunities to fulfil their needs (figure 9.7).

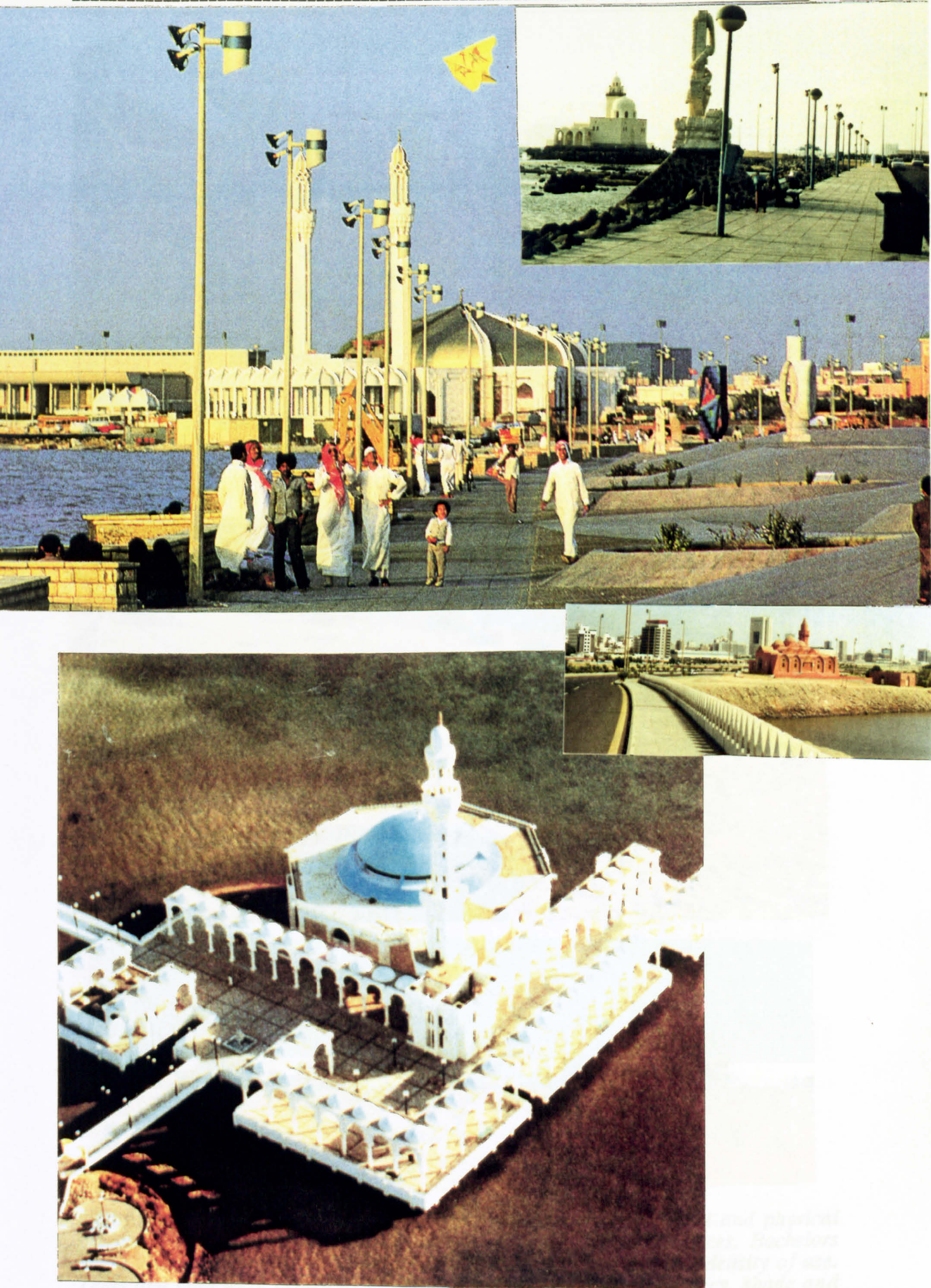


FIGURE 9.6 A mosque area as a preferred place to spend the leisure time.



**FIGURE 9.7** *These pictures illustrate the Shorm Abhors main social and physical problems. Women are grouped and confine themselves covering their faces. Bachelors cause some families privacy intrusion. This picture also shows the density of use. Tents and cars were driven to the nearest point to the sea for privacy, shade and enclosure demands*

The following figures represent the main features of the North Corniche in terms of intensity of use, distribution of facilities and opportunities and type of use. These pictures also illustrate the lack of vertical enclosure (privacy demand), lack of green areas, plants, rocks, mounds and changing levels and space articulation (figure 9.8).



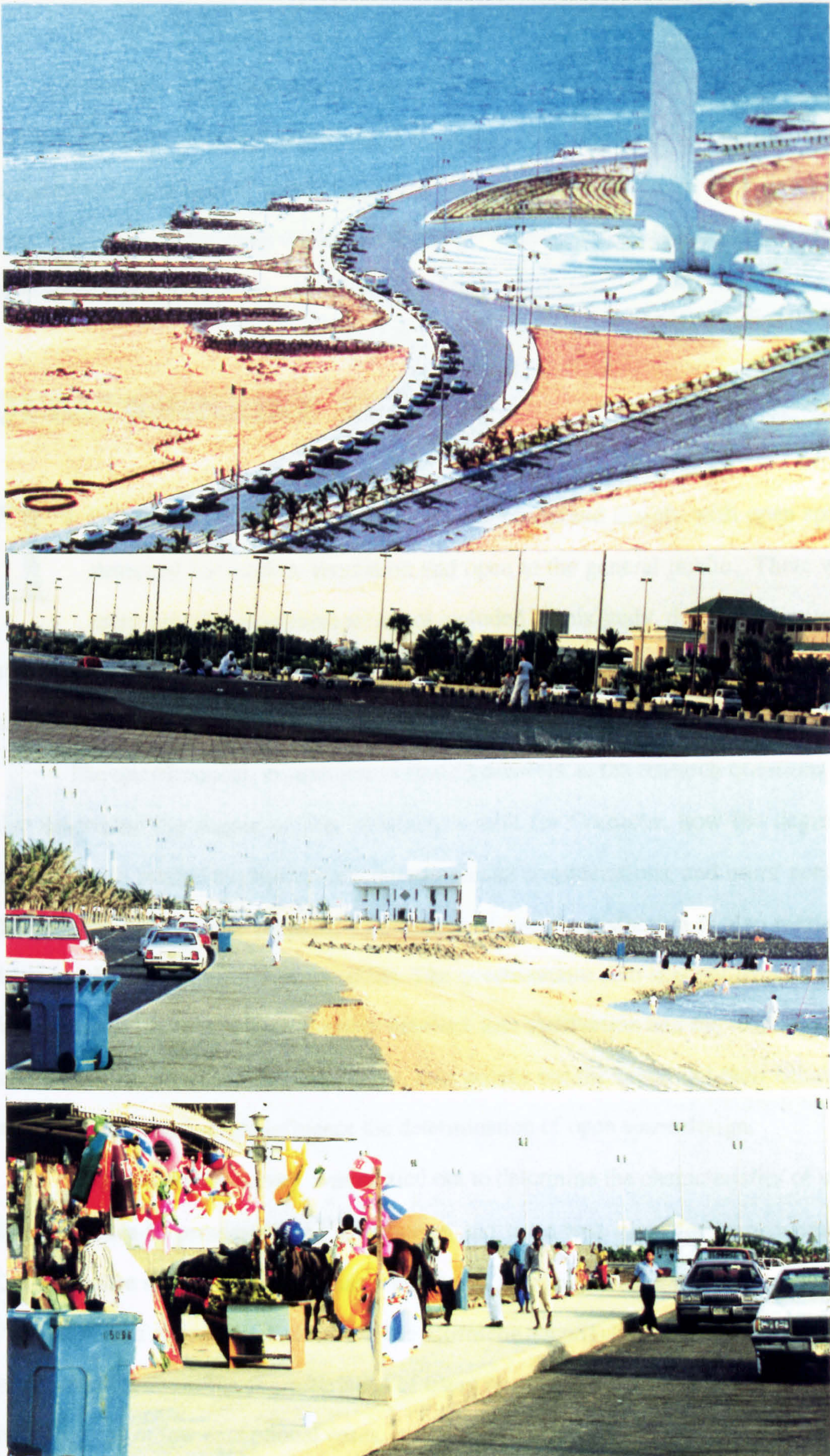
**FIGURE 9.8** *The North Corniche beach. Boating, swimming and wading take place as shown above. There is some danger of boats hitting swimmers. Boating docks should be provided, separated and located away from the swimming/wading beach area.*

The provision and management of public facilities such as toilets and changing rooms is essential to improve some outdoor recreational areas. Raising the level to allow sitting on top of artificial dunes will let people watch the sea, birds and other water

features and activities. Provision should be made to design, enhance and improve some deteriorated sea-side situations. The following pictures (Figures 9.9 and 9.10) illustrate the main Corniche features.



**FIGURE 9.9** *The above pictures represent the danger, inadequate use and the need for proper sitting and private shaded enclosed spaces. The pictures illustrate the danger that might face the children running on the Corniche pavement, or the danger of children walking towards the sea, and the lack of privacy for women sitting on the pavement as well as the need for being in enclosed secure places. Women were not provided with adequate public open areas*



**FIGURE 9.10** *Features of Corniche sea-side outdoor recreational areas.*

In general terms, the tracking and observation data indicated that the Corniche was not based on landscape architectural principles. The Corniche was not adequately designed to be a setting of 'restful functional outdoor recreational areas' or as a place for quiet relaxation and a green enclosed sanctuary. Adding to that the Corniche's spaces have failed to be designed so as to facilitate a sense of privacy.

## QUESTIONNAIRE SURVEY

**T**HE QUESTIONNAIRE SURVEY was concerned mainly with open spaces designed for outdoor recreation and open to the general public. There were other private amusement areas not included in this study, due to the limitation of time and financial resources. Only open spaces in the Corniche of Jeddah, owned and managed by the municipality of Jeddah, were included (See chapter 7).

The questionnaire, in addition to finding answers to the research questions will also determine the degree of user satisfaction with the Corniche, how the degree of satisfaction is related to physical and environmental considerations, and users' needs of the outdoor recreational patterns. The degree of users' satisfaction is also related to demographic and behavioural variables. The questionnaire also sets out to confirm or deny whether there was a relationship between user satisfaction and the recreation and leisure pattern (provision, layout, design, how people use the space and their behaviour and manners), which might influence the determination of open space design.

A questionnaire survey was carried out to determine the characteristics of users, their attitudes to provision; and satisfaction and to canvas ideas for improvements. Questionnaire survey, however, has a number of weaknesses that must be considered. First, the data considers visitors of the Corniche (April-July 1989). That means generalisation about the characteristics of users must be carefully set in a total context since, except in few exceptional cases, it will be impossible to gather information from the total population of the whole site so it is preferable to obtaining a reliable sample of

the visitors themselves. For example, and due to the very sensitivity of the topic of privacy, it is very difficult to ask each visitor personal information, especially about their families. In practice, some visitors were very co-operative, others were reluctant and some were very negative. In addition to those difficulties, Burton <sup>19</sup> lists three main sources of error:

- the choice of entrance to the site may not be representative;
- the days selected for the survey may not be representative of total use patterns;
- visitors are unlikely to come at a constant rate and thus it is difficult to select a sample that adequately represents the total population of users.

It is worth mentioning that there are some problems inherent in a survey of this type which are fully recognised, but the information could not be realistically collected in any other way. At every step in the following discussion, the reader required to be constantly aware of the limitations of the data.

## **REASONS FOR SELECTING THE CORNICHE AS THE STUDY AREA**

The reasons the Corniche was selected as a study area are as follows:

- The visitors come from various areas and nearby cities. Thus their opinions reflect, to some extent, that of the total population of Saudi Arabia. The Corniche has been indicated as the most popular public recreational site in the city due to the amount of open space it offers and because of its location on the Red Sea.<sup>20</sup>
- Most of the landscape design projects used in the study are typical examples of various public recreational areas all over different parts Saudi Arabia.
- From a landscape architectural point of view, the Corniche is in need of immediate attention from all agencies concerned about its applicability to facilitate both man and nature.
- Various social and physical problems had been noted by the researcher since the park's establishment in 1973. Such as privacy intrusion, behavioural conflicts, the bother of bachelors for females, the social tension and conflicts between visitors and automobiles, between pedestrians and those sitting on the pavements, and conflicts between heads of families and single male visitors.



## SAMPLING

**A**LTHOUGH the selection of the Corniche park was not random, the sample points were selected at intervals of 5 km along the Corniche. However sometimes the selection was based on the availability of respondents. The intention was to distribute 300 questionnaires on Jeddah's Corniche and 200 among those citizens who were not using the Corniche at the time of field work. Unfortunately there were many difficulties and critical situations which faced the researcher. These included the sensitivity of the topic, the need to ask the head of the family during his participation with his family, the feeling of intruding on the respondents own privacy, and having to ask the respondents to let their wives, sisters and any available relatives to fill in the questionnaire format. This is because it is not normal to ask someone in public about his own opinion, suggestions, personal information and above all their feeling about privacy and security. That situation forced the researcher to put in more effort and time into this project, and to produce some governmental documents to explain the real situation for different kinds of people. Although the higher educated respondents were positively interviewed others were very difficult, and sometime impossible to get any information from at all. This situation gave no choice for the researcher just to ask anyone using the Corniche site at any time at any place to fill the format so sample is biased to better educated. At the same time the researcher had to ask his sisters, wife, and many of his relatives to distribute 200 questionnaire formats to females in their homes or schools and all academic institutions. The total completed number of the questionnaire formats was 275 out of 500.( 55%).

## SURVEYING OF MAJOR RECREATIONAL SITES

**P**INKENTON <sup>21</sup> describe a recreation survey as "a co-operative undertaking which applies scientific methods to the study and treatment of current recreation data, problems and conditions. The limits of a survey are prescribed before

execution, and its facts, findings, conclusions and recommendations are made common knowledge and provide a base for intelligent co-ordinating action".

In practical terms it may be important to get an accurate count of the total number of visitors to a recreational site, except in the few cases, where access is through a limited number of gates, and enough interviewers can be provided to cover each access point. An additional problem occurs when the site is totally opened without controlling access. Visitors can get access to the Corniche from various locations, which makes it impossible to cover all sites on a single day. Site surveys in the Corniche are further complicated by great fluctuation in the time-duration of the visitor's interview (around 5 to 20 minutes) both through constant distant intervals, and sometime the respondents need more time from the researcher to explain to him the main aims of the research, then how he can explain again the questionnaire format to his family to fill it.

A selection technique to interview every visitor will either fall down completely during peak periods or leave interviewers almost completely idle during quiet periods. The researcher found it extremely difficult, especially in interviewing families, to approach a visitor every 10 to 15 minutes or every 5 miles using the clock or the car meter to ensure non-bias, it took about 20 to 40 minutes, depends on the situation and time of the day or night. It was found to be very critical to ask the head of the family to be interviewed and fill in the questionnaire, because that action in itself is a sort of privacy intrusion. But by being patient and by accepting whatever came from the visitor, the researcher has succeeded in gathering an acceptable sample that should represent, in reasonable degree, how visitors to the study area view the existing outdoor recreational areas. But visitors who refuse to be co-operative are under-represented and the sample may be biased if their views are under representative of the total population.

## DESIGN OF THE QUESTIONNAIRE

**A** COPY of the questionnaire is found in Appendix A. The questionnaire has been designed to be simple with plenty of space for replies and clear instructions about completion. The questions from Chapter 8 have guided the researcher in formulating the questionnaire. For example, the need to explore the relationship between visitors' satisfaction and the outdoor recreational and leisure provision and design and how that might influence or determine open space design. In addition, how people behave in relation to the leisure site (privacy attitudes as an influencing factor by spatial and physical design, as well as by local culture)

In constructing the questionnaire several factors were considered. These include the way the questions were asked, the reliability of the response and the respondent's opinions. The questionnaire was designed in such a way that each respondent would be asked several questions to find out if people were satisfied with what is presented? If not, why not? Does the Corniche offer what people want? What contributes to visitors enjoyment? What detracts from visitors' enjoyment? What additional provisions do visitors seek? How well does the Corniche meet the requirements of Saudi families?

The questionnaire was designed with three interrelated parts. Firstly, personal data, the open space characteristics, such as the physical patterns, the location of recreational services and facilities, and the types of and size of recreational sites, the visual corridor, and the provided pedestrian ways and traffic movements. Secondly, the questionnaire sought an appraisal of the satisfaction and dissatisfaction of visitors in regard to participation in active/passive recreational activities. Satisfaction of privacy level is a focal point of this research, so accordingly an appropriate degree of privacy and the satisfaction of visitors was examined by questions that revealed people's opinions and attitudes, as well as their demands and suggestions. Thirdly, visitors' opinions of the efficiency of the physical plan of the site was examined according to landscape architectural concepts.

In short this questionnaire was intended to gather information that might provide logical recommendations, which may assist environmental planners and designers in Saudi Arabia in the 'decision making process'. The ultimate aim is to achieve a 'higher user satisfaction' within the frame of local and environmental domains.

The questionnaire was divided into 3 parts.

**First part:** Demographic information (socio-economic status). The idea behind this set of questions is to provide information about each respondent, e.g. to know his or her background (nationality, occupation, level of education age and sex) since this may affect who uses of recreational facilities. In addition, the information obtained from visitors might help the designer to specify landscape materials that suit the users of the recreation areas. There are also some questions about the number of automobiles used to visit the site which might define the parking areas, density and the roads needed or the number of visitors per car and size of group and gender, to define the recreation activity areas needed for each user, and to define the amount of public services needed, such as toilets and praying areas as well as to provide adequate access, parking and pattern of open spaces. Attendance information was also provided to define how many times the site had been visited, the duration of stay, reasons for leaving the site, and from where and to where visitors were moving.

Questions about the pattern of use were included to know which days of the week are preferred for visiting for outdoor recreation, to specify the time, best days available for recreation facilities, operation management, and to obtain why some visitors visit the site during times which deviate from the norm, such as in the early mornings. Moreover information about over-use/under-use of existing recreational facilities, such as play equipment and the pattern of use to define the balance of landscape soft/hard elements and facilities, for example, durability of materials; the distance of those facilities from recreation areas; and the design measurements and limitations.

**Second part:** This is about the locality and neighbourhood recreation areas. This part deal with the perception of nearby open spaces, to test how each respondent knows, reacts to and interacts with nearby recreational areas (if any) and, at the same time, the respondent was asked to tick from a table some general features of an open

space, and simultaneously to evaluate its condition. Respondents' satisfaction has also been highlighted by questions. For example, satisfaction information has been needed to assist, for example, privacy and free-social problems to define the pattern of recreational site needed to suit local people and their pursuits leisure pattern. Questions about shelter provisions and protection from sand blow were included to define the kind of three-dimensional pattern to screen unwanted conditions, as well as to define the kind of screens needed to provide the degree/level of privacy.

The type of recreation activity , for example, passive or active, had been entered in the questionnaire to define why some visitors were unable to participate in active recreational activities, or why men are more able to pursue outdoor recreational activities than women. Respondents' general suggestions are considered to help enhance existing patterns and to avoid future physical and social problems.

**Final part:** Activities, services and the design of the Corniche park. This part was intended to know the impression of each respondent (and, if possible, each member of a family) about the Corniche as a recreational site, in terms of its layout, attractions, problems, general views and the most attractive/ unattractive landscape elements. The idea behind these questions was to give the researcher information in general about the overall attitudes of a sample of the population about the recreation and leisure pattern of the study area. In short, to know if the area is generally satisfactory or not, and whether the existing Corniche's recreational pattern needs to be redeveloped, enhanced, or changed. Briefly, to know whether this example of outdoor recreation areas in Saudi Arabia should be a model for any new recreational planning, whether it should be modified, or whether is should be prevented in future developments.

## PILOT SURVEY

**K**ANE<sup>22</sup> has noted that the pilot survey is a "general exploration to determine the focus and approach of the study," as well as to test the sufficiency of questions or the ambiguity statements or meanings. A pilot survey of the questionnaire was conducted in Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, during the period March and April of 1989, in the summer time, when most of the people participate in the various recreational activities, to determine inadequacies in the wording and structure of the questions. Doctor Abdul-Hameed Al-bis was appointed by Umm-Al Qura university to supervise the researcher during the field work. In addition, Dr. Abdul-Mohsen Farahat, chairman of the Landscape Architectural department and Dr. Mohammad Ali Al-Shahrani in King Abdul-Aziz University were very helpful for the research in adjusting the questions and in translation procedure.

The pilot study was also used to find out whether the questions could be asked in such a way that they reduced or avoid questions seeking opinions or encouraging respondents to answer according to the researcher's wants rather than what they actually felt and their own opinions, because leading questions will provide inaccurate information. The questionnaire was translated from English to Arabic. A random sample of 20 respondents of families, friends and colleagues was chosen to test the questionnaire and interview method. During the pilot study, several questions were changed and several questions were added.

A valuable part of the pilot interview was the discussion of the questions between the author and the respondents after they had answered the questions. The respondents were asked : 1) what the question meant to them; 2) what further ideas they had that were not brought out by the questionnaire; and 3) what his or her feeling were about the questions in general. The criticisms and suggestions were recorded and evaluated. In short, the questionnaire translated from English to Arabic, by consulting some friends,

to avoid pitfalls of translation. This suggested that different questions should be changed to choose best of some.

The research method has considered, in addition to the previous points, the study of certain plans of specific recreational site(s) to explain what sorts of requirements are needed to improve or adapt current outdoor recreational sites, to investigate the reason for not using some outdoor recreational areas, how often visitor use them, what activities they usually practice, to see if the privacy treatment in outdoor recreational areas is adequate for families or not, what visitor opinion about the privacy in the recreational areas, and to explore privacy as an important factor in deterring families from the use of some outdoor recreational areas, as well as how to predict and enhance future recreational and leisure patterns as determining factors and variables for open space planning and design in Saudi Arabia. The outcome of the previous research methods and findings are explained in the next chapter, which shows the questionnaire findings.

## Notes And References

---

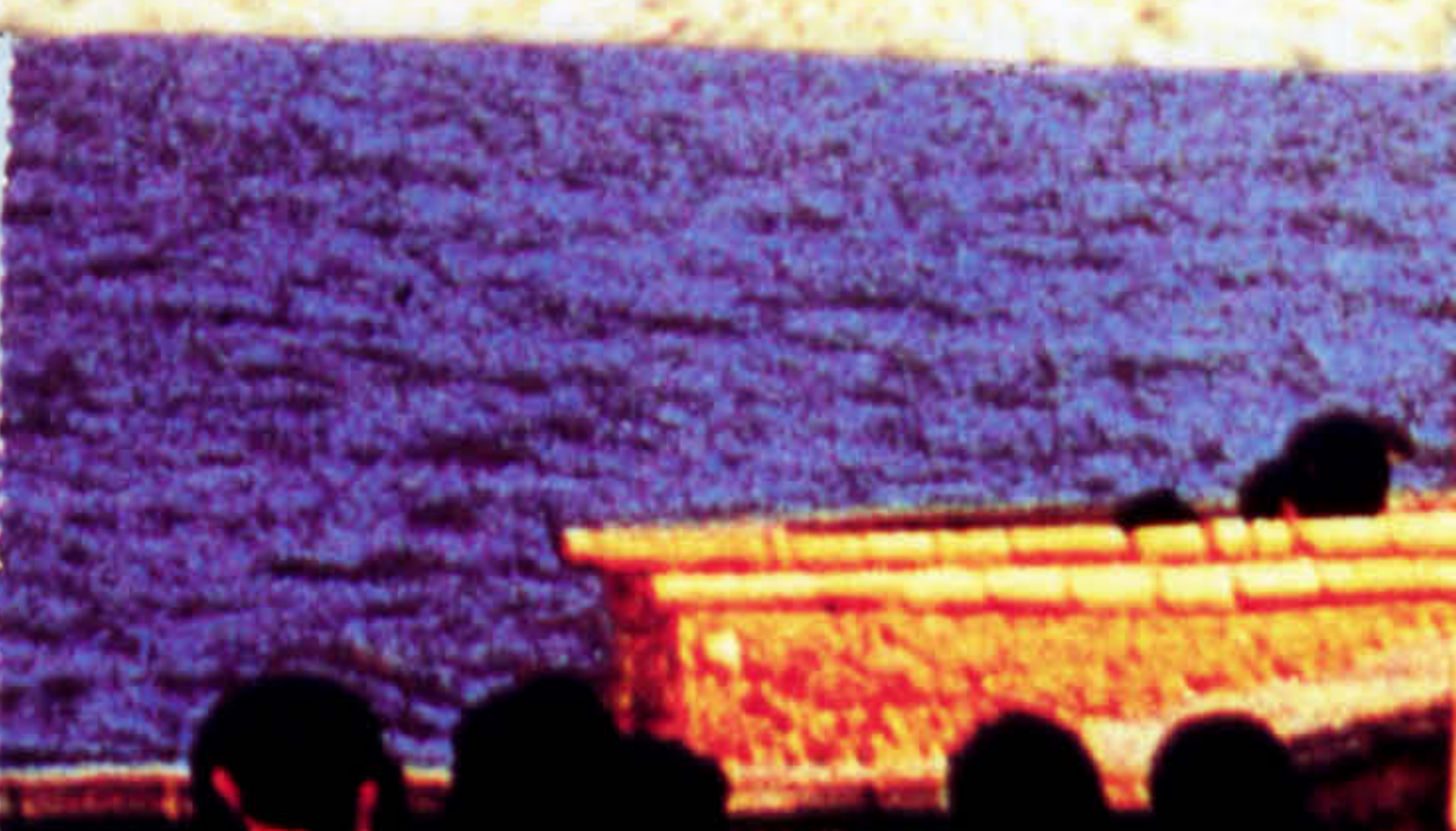
- 1 Kane, E. (1984) Doing Your Own Research (London: Marion Boyars)
- 2 Marsh, W. (1983) Landscape Planning: Environmental Application (U.S.A.: Addison-Wesley Publishing Company), p.11
- 3 Simonds, J. (1983) Landscape Architecture: Manual of Site Planning and Design (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company).p. 165
- 4 Turner, T. (1991) "Pattern Analysis" in: Landscape Design (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute), October 1991, No. 204, p.40. 185
- 5 Sit, c. (1979) The Art of Building Cities (Trans. Stewart, C.T.) (New York: Reinhold Hyperion). p.186
- 6 Ibid.
- 7 Al-Shahrani, M. (1992) An Inquiry into Leisure and Recreation Pattern and its Relationship to the Open Space and Landscape Design: The Case of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished PhD, University of Edinburgh, p. 239
- 8 Peter, J. (1973) Urban Space (Ottawa: Ministry of Urban Affairs)
- 9 Hultsman, John. et al. (1987) Planning Parks for People (London: E. & F.N. Spond. Ltd), p.310
- 10 Jeddah Action Master Plan
- 11 Burton, T.(1971) Experiments in Recreation Research (London: Alden & Mowbray Ltd), p.19
- 12 Simonds, op. cit. p.51
- 13 Zeisel, John (1981) Inquiry by Design: Tools for Environmental-Behaviour Research (Bemont: Wadsworth, Inc.). USA., pp. 100-124
- 14 Ibid.
- 15 Ibid., p.131)
- 16 Ibid.
- 17 Whyte, W. H. (1980) The Social life of small urban spaces (Washington, DC: The Conservation Foundation), p. 109
- 18 Al-Shahrani, (1991),op cit. p. 150
- 19 Burton, op cit., p.19
- 20 Nahhas, M.,(1986), An Analysis of the Need for Public Recreation Facilities in the City of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, unpublished Plan Paper Submitted to the Dept. of Recreation, Park and Leisure Studies, University of Minnesota, USA, p. 34;Waller, op. cit., and Al-Shahrani, M. (1992), An Inquiry into Leisure and Recreation Pattern and its Relationship to the Open Space and Landscape Design: The Case of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished PhD, University of Edinburgh
- 21 Pinkerton, J and Pinkerton, M., (1969), Outdoor Recreation and Leisure: A Reference Guide and Selected Bibliography (Columbia: Research Centre, School of Business and Public Administration, University of Missouri -Columbia, Columbia, Missouri)
- 22 Ibid.



# 10

## CHAPTER 10

### Questionnaire Findings



# 10

## Questionnaire Findings

*"The Corniche area is marvellous and to a high level but we the women did not have recreational place; only to sit in front of the sea. . . and on very rare occasions to sit in restaurants or to go to amusement parks, where most of the people who enjoy the Corniche are only children and adult males, where there is nothing to deter them in front of women, it is so difficult to participate in any activity for women, and more over we could not even enjoy the private chalets.. due to lack of privacy... We stay less than an hour because of the high and hot temperature and due to lack of suitable place for Saudi family."<sup>1</sup>*

*"There were no factors to attract me to spend my leisure time on the Corniche, just to sit idly and watch. I can sit in my own home where no one interferes with my privacy and be free from annoying bachelors"<sup>2</sup>*

### INTRODUCTION

**T**HIS CHAPTER analyses and synthesises the findings and results of the questionnaire. The results were mainly obtained through the analysis procedures of a personal computer statistical software package. The package is called "StatView II".<sup>3</sup> Information collected from the sample was coded to enable it to be comprehensively analysed. Apart from reporting the findings in percentage form, tables, chi-square and cross-tabulation techniques were used to treat the data. The chi-square test was chosen primarily because data collected was ordinal and nominal in scale. Chi-square is a nonparametric technique used in this research to analyse the association between variables. Siegel gives an account of the use of chi-square for two independent samples and points out that "when frequencies in distorted categories, either nominal or ordinal constitute the data of research, the chi-square test may be used to determine the significance of differences."<sup>4</sup> Ott et al state: "Some studies yield only ordinal-level data because of the crudeness of the measuring instruments employed by investigators (note: this is not the fault of the investigators but rather a problem in obtaining objective

measurement). Although measurements of this occur in almost all fields of study, they are particularly common in the social sciences."<sup>5</sup>

The nominal variable is one where we can distinguish between categories of a variable but cannot rank the categories in any order (marital, sex, country of birth and education). An ordinal variable is one where it is meaningful to rank the categories, for example, how strongly the visitors agree or disagree with a particular statement or level of privacy. The categories can be rank ordered in terms of the strength of agreement they reflect toward a statement or attitude. However, any variable in which categories can be ranked but where the difference between the categories cannot be quantified in precise numerical terms is an ordinal variable. An interval/ratio variable is one in which categories have a natural ranking and it is possible to quantify precisely the differences between the categories. Age, if it is measured in years, is an interval variable. If age was simply measure as young, middle aged and old it would be an ordinal variable.<sup>6</sup>

From the variety of the statistical procedures offered by the StatView statistical package, the frequency distribution and the cross-tabulation tables of two or three variables are obtained. These tables are mainly used to analyse and examine the relationship between some variables in the questionnaire. Cross-tabulations are a way of displaying data so that we can fairly readily detect association between two variables. The use of this analysis will aid in describing one characteristic of the sample at a time, to formulate a question. For example, do visitor's education, culture and gender affect their satisfaction with regard to privacy? Or who is more concerned with privacy: women or men. In short, the data can be analysed depending on what we want to know.

The format of the questionnaire constitutes three parts (Appendix A). The first deals with eighteen background questions and personal details of the respondents, their dwelling and type of indoor recreational facilities. The second relates to the locality, surrounding neighbourhood and alternative outdoor recreational services and facilities. The third relates to recreational activities, services and the design of the study area.

## QUESTIONNAIRE RESULTS: FIRST PART

**T**HE FIRST PART of the questionnaire consists of several demographic questions which ask about nationality, dwelling unit, occupation, gender, marital status, age and educational level so as to provide information that might affect the choice and design of outdoor recreational sites.

### BACKGROUND AND PERSONAL DETAILS OF RESPONDENTS

In order to understand respondents background and personal details, demographic questions were directed to both gender. Questions were directed to determine the nationality, place of residency, occupation, dwelling status, gender, religion, marital status, age, head of the family, educational level, monthly income, size of the household, ages and sexes of the members of the household.

The first question was about nationality of respondents (figure 10.1). Most of visitors to Jeddah's Corniche are Saudi (78%). This means planning and design of the Corniche ought to consider and satisfy the Saudi's way of life and their leisure pattern.

The second question aimed to discover the place of residency. This can be related to know from where most of people came to visit the Corniche. The data show most of the Corniche visitors (83%) were from Jeddah,.

The third question aimed to know respondent's occupation. This can be related to discover class of visitors. Because amount of leisure time to be spent in outdoor recreational area will be affected by the status of users. For example, students might have more spare time than the self-employed. The data indicated that students represented over 31% of the sample. Visitors' occupation also included 14% government employees, 9% in military institutions and 10% housewives. Company employees, private business, and merchants each made up less than 10%.

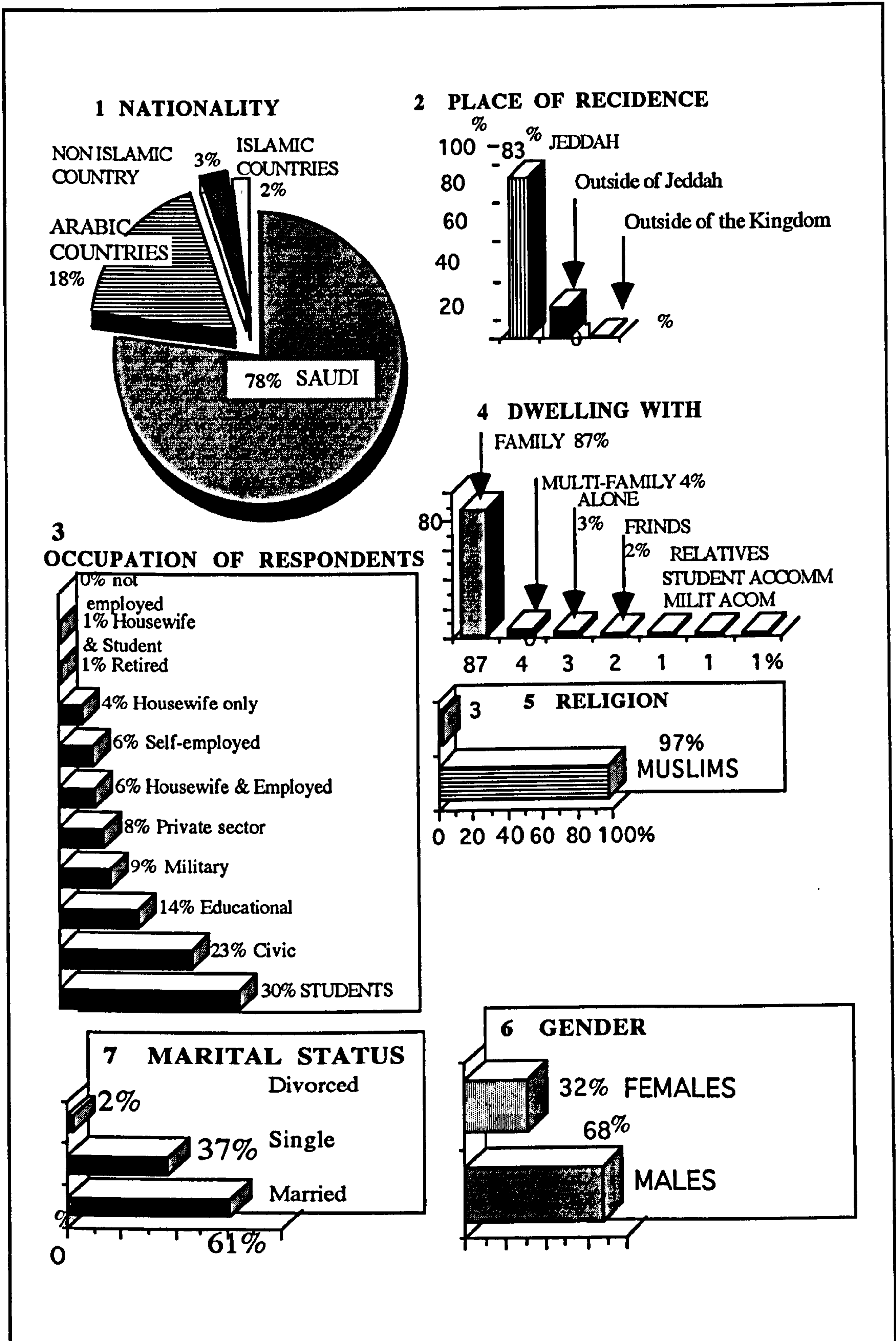


FIGURE 10.1 General background information of survey respondents

From the above figure, the data show that 36% of the sample are working in different institutions. This means government employee and students are more than self-employed and housewives in using existing outdoor recreation. This might encourage designers to provide more adequate areas within public outdoor recreation provisions to attract housewives and the self-employed. But the self-employed have less leisure time than government employee or students.

Question number 4 aimed to discover who each respondent dwelt with. This is because to know what type of people use the outdoor recreational site. In the family structure of the respondents a sizeable percentage of households 87% are lived in by families. This mean most of the visitors were family groups. The percentage of males alone represented 37%. Therefore, the design must accommodate both the family use of outdoor open spaces and bachelors' leisure attitudes. That, also, means the layout to be carefully thought of to suit each member of the family. Gender consideration must be integrated in shaping outdoor recreational area. The data show that the percentages of males (68) in Jeddah's Corniche (question No. 5) were often higher than the percentage of females because the great number of males who visit the Corniche seeking outdoor recreational opportunities, while 32% of females visit Jeddah's Corniche. This might be due to the lack of adequate outdoor recreational opportunities which suit females leisure pattern or because it was more difficult to interview females. For example, privacy intrusion, bothering of bachelors and the lack of attractive facilities for women's use might be the reason to deter using outdoor recreational areas. In addition, religious control the use of outdoor recreation areas where women must not mix or exchange looking to males. In terms of the respondents' religion, the Saudi society is assumed to be almost 100% Muslim. Thus it is not exceptional to find that 97 % of the sample reported to be Muslims (question No. 6). Non-Muslim are usually expatriates working in Jeddah. The planning and design must be projected from the local religion of the locality.

In response to marital status (question No.7) 61% of the respondents indicated that they were married, 37% singles and only 2% were divorced. This percentage of marital status can be also utilised to divide the outdoor recreational areas in proportion to these

percentages. For example, 60% of the total outdoor recreational areas might be planned and designed for family use only, and the other areas to be organised according to other uses.

Age of respondent is worth mentioning. Age-impedance is a life cycle factor affecting participation and choice of activities. Ages and sexes of users are important factors to be considered in shaping any project. In referring to the age of the sample (question No. 8), most of them were expected to be in their thirties or above (26 -35 age group were 39%) Figure 10.2.

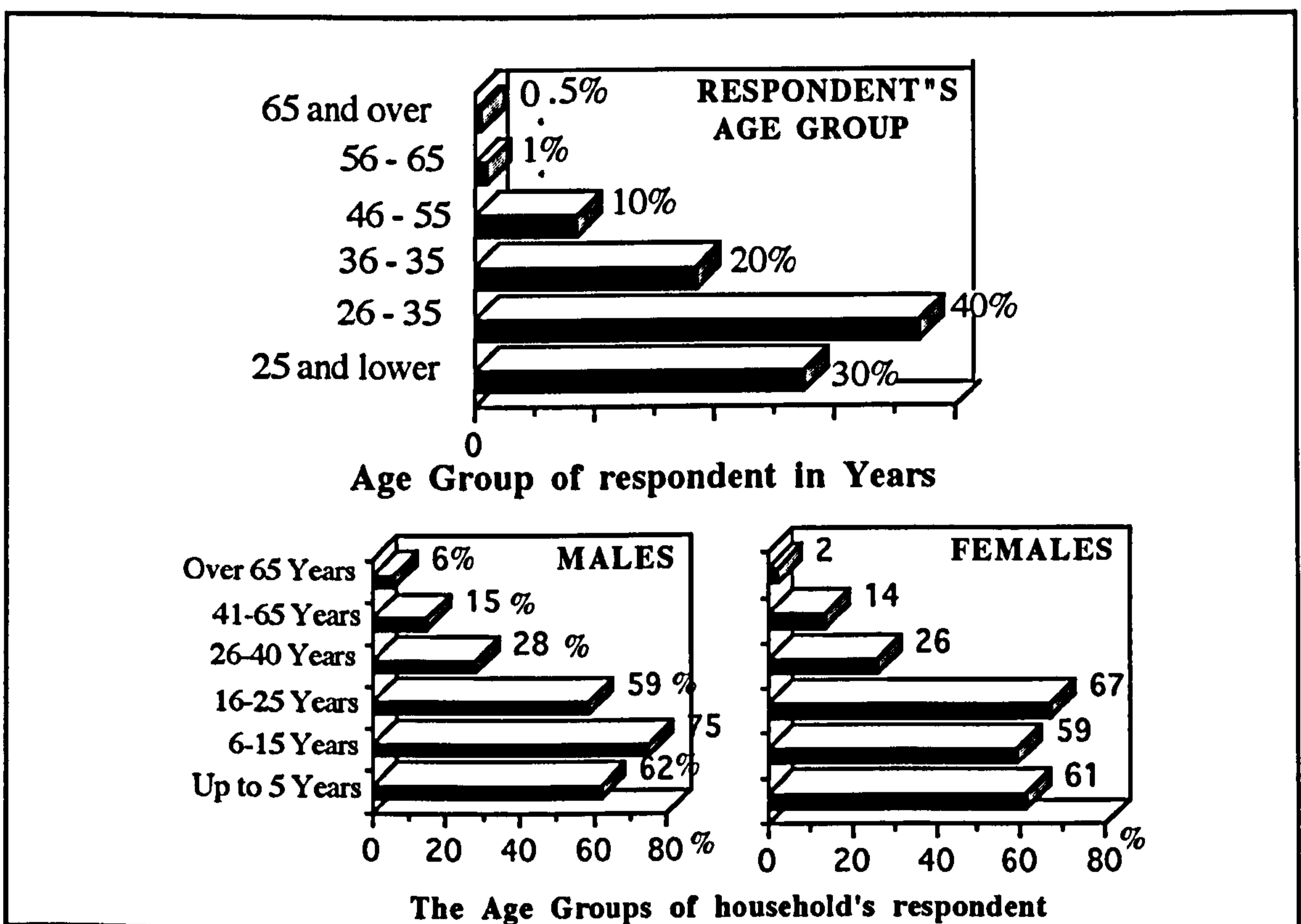


FIGURE 10.2 Age group of the respondents and their households members

The previous figure showed that the main age group was the 26 to 35 years old. This can be justified by two points. Most households have parents who are expected to be in their middle age. The other point is that the field work has been undertaken in the Corniche public outdoor recreational areas where the lack of the older visitors' facilities (as well as women) may deter many of them from visiting the site, which means that only younger- male visitors could participate in the area.

Question No. 9 aimed to discover the head of the family (table 10.1), as were expected to consist of a head of the house. 90% of respondents were controlled by their father.

TABLE 10.1 Head of the family

1	Father	90%
2	Son	7%
3	Grandfather	2%
4	Daughter	0%
5	Mother	0%
6	Other	1%

In response to a question asking about the education level of the respondents (table 10.2) most of them were in a satisfactory level of education. 82% held certificates ranged from secondary school to post graduates.

TABLE 10.2 Cross-tabulation of the relationship between respondent's level of education and gender

LEVEL OF EDUCATION	Male (n=184)	Female (n= 87)	Total (N= 271)
HIGH	48%	33%	44%
MIDDLE	42%	62%	49%
LOW	10%	5%	7%

DF: 9      Total Chi-Square: 12.33      p = .196

Table (10.3) illustrates the type of recreational activities practised by family members varied between watching television, video games, swings, playing football, walking or driving for pleasure. The families with children of 5 years or less the main recreational activities were playing with toys, swings and visiting public or private amusements. While families with children of age groups of 15 to 25 years old were often participating in playing soccer, cards, driving and watching television. The adults or more elderly people often participated in walking, visiting relatives or friends and other passive activities.

From figure 10.3 and table 10.3, the family structure of the respondents a sizeable percentage of households, 60% are lived in by families with young children, approximately 60% of the respondents have children's group of less than 5 to 15 years old.



TABLE 10.3 Illustrates the percentages of the members and the sexes of the household members and their main activities in correspondence to the age group.

Age Groups	Sex	%	Activities
Less than 5 years old	M	62	Toys
	F	61	
From 6 - 15 years old	M	75	Watching TV, Video games, swings and toddlers games
	F	59	
From 16 - 25 years old	M	59	Playing football, cards, Watching TV, driving etc.
	F	67	
From 26 - 40 years old	M	28	playing football, cards, Watching TV, and driving for pleasure , etc.
	F	26	
From 41 - 65 years old	M	15	Walking, visiting relatives and friends, and driving for pleasure, etc.
	F	14	
More than 65 years old	M	6	Sitting, Watching TV, etc.
	F	2	

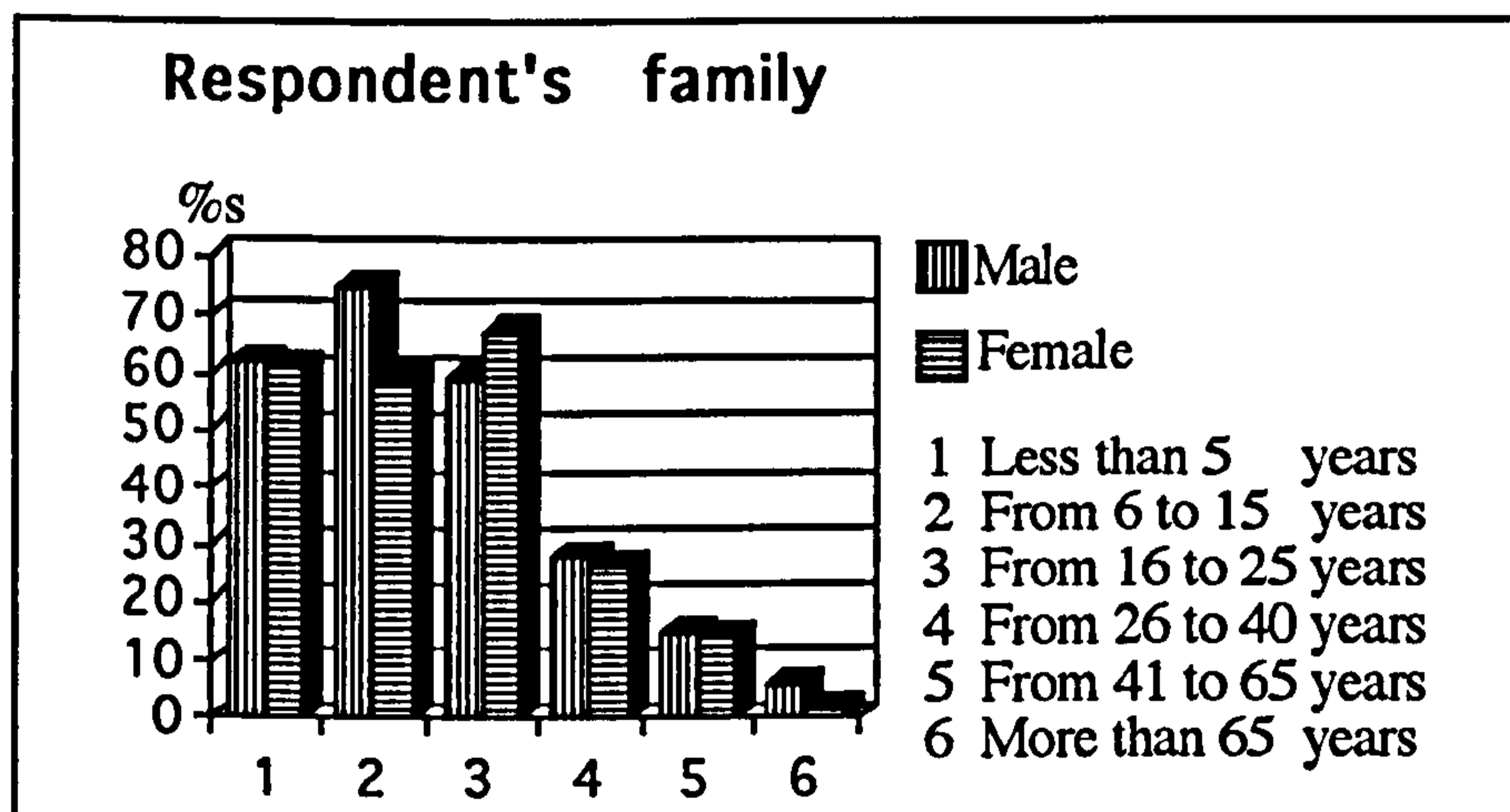


FIGURE 10.3 Chart illustrates household's family percentages of male and female of respondent.

Income is an important factor affecting the demand for recreation. Question No. 12 aimed to explore the average income of Jeddah's Corniche visitors (table 10.4). Generally speaking, respondents can be considered as a middle income group, where 36% of them have a monthly income between 4001 to 8000 Saudi Riyals (£600 to 1200). Low income, also have the same percentage of 36%, where their monthly income was less than 2000 to 4000 SR. The high income respondents (13% of the total) earned from 8000 to more than 12000 SR. Only 16% of the sample were did not have income. This is because some of them were women or students who depend on their head of the family.

TABLE 10.4 Monthly income in Saudi Riyals

Low income (less than 2000 to 4000 SR)	36%
Middle income (from 4001 to 8000 SR)	36%
High income (From 8001 to more than 12000 SR)	13%
No income	15%

In the 1980s the average income for Saudis was about 3000 SR. This is expected to be higher nowadays. Salaries would be different between different ranks and within degrees of a rank according to the years of employment, so they are difficult to determine. But generally a lower rank employer like servitor (servant) would earn around 2000 SR. A higher rank like a clerk with intermediate certificate would earn around 3500 SR. A school teacher with a bachelor degree may earn around 7000 SR. A doctor may earn up to 12000 SR or more. The growth in participation in almost the whole range of recreational activities has occurred at the same time as the society has become richer. This is because spending on recreation needs disposable income in the same way as it uses disposable time. In addition, the relationship between changes in income and changes in recreational behaviour leaves plenty of scope for variations from activity to activity, or place to place. For example, more subtly the people may demand more pay-beaches or costly boat moorings and second-home complexes or chalets. In short, the more income and the more spare time the more the demand for recreational opportunities. Not only the income or spare time affect level of the use of Jeddah's Corniche, but also mobility.

Question No. 13 aimed to know the kind of transportation used by the respondent for recreational purposes. Quality and means of transportation will affect the use of cars on recreation demand. This is because the use of the car has made travel to recreation sites cheaper, faster and more convenient and makes it possible to travel further. In addition, the use of the car for recreational travel has permitted demand to be spread over more areas and over more activities. Data showed the use of private car by respondent was 85 %, while 14% of the sample visit the Corniche with friend or relative's private

car, i.e. 99% of the respondents visit the Corniche by private transportation. This is because visitors are no longer confined to the public transport corridors, but can explore less well frequented areas. In addition, car's capacity to carry, or trail, far more recreational equipment than is generally possible on public transport. This means growth in income , free-time , motorways and public services were encouraging to use the car, and equally it is difficult to imagine such demand for outdoor opportunities without the car.

The increase in personal mobility, through car use, has not only allowed people to travel further, to spread themselves more widely, and take up a broad range of activities, but has also quite simply led to more recreation taking place outside the home. This can be a good indication to encourage planners and designers of Jeddah's Corniche to enhance the nature of the recreation sites, in terms of size, sort or quality of facilities, which in turn affect its power to attract visitors over distance. The time, money and trouble that people are prepared to spend travelling to a recreation site has been used as a way of measuring the attractiveness of particular sites, and thus the value, in terms of its contribution to well-being, of one site compared with another.

Mobility, accessibility and location all together will influence the number of visitors to the outdoor provision. The distance travelled has an effect on the demand for open space, demand decreases as distance increases and vice versa. May be the lack of adequate facilities and privacy intrusion cause people to travel to more distant open spaces seeking facilities and protection for their family.

The previous question was followed by two questions to investigate the number of cars used for recreational purposes and number of cars used for personal and family transportation (table 10. 5 ). The use of two cars for recreational purposes was greater than the use of two cars for personal or family transportation. This is because often a large family will arrange their cars to form enclosed and secure and private and shaded space.

TABLE 10.5 Illustrates how many cars used for recreational purposes and for personal and family use.

Number of cars used for recreational purposes		Number of cars used for personal use and family transportation	
One car	69%	One car	69%
Two cars	28%	Two cars	16%
Three cars	2%	Three cars	12%
More than four cars	1%	More than four cars	1%

The next question (No. 16) aimed to discover what type of recreational facilities the respondent has in his house? The idea behind this question is to know whether there is a relationship between the availability of recreational facilities within the household and with the number visiting the outdoor recreational areas. In other words, the relationship between indoor recreational activities with outdoor recreational activities (table 10.6).

TABLE 10.6 Indoor recreational activities

1	Television	98%
2	Video	74%
3	Recreational games	52%
4	Video games	51%
5	Courtyard	28%
6	Night Recreational place	19%
7	Private garden	19%
8	Patio	16%
9	Livestock place	14%
10	Swimming pool	4%

From researcher point of view, it seems that the more the people have more indoor recreational facilities within the household the less they visit outdoor recreational facilities. Leisure time is a limited period, so if there are indoor recreational opportunities (television, video games or sitting area for friends to play cards) that consume most of that time, then visiting outdoor recreational areas will be expected less than indoor ones.

The data showed that 98% of the respondents have a television set, 71% have a home library, 74% have video sets. Those household entertainment might influence visitors to spend more leisure time inside the house which on the other hand gives an indication to the environmental designer to find new and adequate attractive outdoor recreational and more healthier facilities.

The present way of spending the leisure time towards indoor rather than outdoor pursuits was related to the harsh climate of Jeddah and the lack of adequate outdoor open spaces or local gardens. The relationship between leisure opportunities and the people's felt needs is to be found through effective use of resources, through reconsidering the provision of outdoor leisure facilities, both qualitatively and quantitatively, and understanding of people's leisure environment. The things that influence the people to choose between spending their leisure time either indoor or outdoor depends, as mentioned before, on various factors such as the physical structure of the provision, cultural-religious characteristics and the availability of opportunities and free time.

Two questions were directed to discover the type and the ownership of the residences. In response to the housing type (question No. 17), 55% of the sample indicated that they lived in flat, 31% of the sample reported that they lived in villas, and less than 12% of the sample lived in traditional houses (table 10.7).

TABLE 10.7 the type and the ownership of the residences

<b>Residence type</b>	<b>%</b>	<b>Residency ownership</b>	<b>%</b>
<b>Flat</b>	<b>55%</b>	<b>Own</b>	<b>49%</b>
<b>Villa</b>	<b>31%</b>	<b>Rented</b>	<b>44%</b>
<b>Traditional house</b>	<b>12%</b>	<b>Government provided</b>	<b>8%</b>

In viewing the previous 18 questions, most of the respondents were Saudis, and most of them lived in Jeddah, with middle income to high income, and most of them own at least one car. In terms of those who were educated most of the respondents were holding at least intermediate school certificates.

The above analysis illustrates that 36% of the sample were in the low income group while 72% of the respondents were in or below the average high income group. On the other hand almost 99% of the sample used private cars for visiting the recreational areas. This coupled with the high percentages of females and children who cannot drive. In addition 11% of the sample were housewives. In regard to residence type, apparently flat buildings were the most common type of housing. This raises questions about the

place where children usually play and the nearest recreational open spaces. Flat buildings are usually located in medium to high density areas and along the major roads in order to benefit from transportation facilities. In addition, most of the flat buildings were developed for investment purposes during the period of the recent boom. The open spaces among these buildings lack the basic recreational opportunities or adequacy of layout like garden spaces with privacy for families. This kind of building is only suitable for adults without children. Consequently reasonable and affordable recreational services should be within reach of such groups. The following sections will examine the outdoor recreational open space facilities, services conditions.

## **QUESTIONNAIRE RESULTS: SECOND PART**

### **LOCALITY AND SURROUNDING NEIGHBOURHOOD ALTERNATIVE OPEN SPACES**

**T**he second part of the questionnaire aimed to evaluate the appearance of the locality and surrounding neighbourhood. It consists of three specific questions related to the neighbourhood and the existing outdoor recreational open spaces. The first question aimed to discover the period the person had lived in the city of Jeddah. This can be related to how people adapt to their environment, which is based on the assumption that the longer the person lives in a place the more he becomes adapted to that place. It is helpful to understand the reaction of people to their environment, especially if services, facilities and overall layouts are going to be evaluated. Regarding the length of time the respondent lived in Jeddah, 32% of the sample indicated that they had been living in the city for less than 5 years; 14% for a period ranging from 6 to 10 years; and 23% for a period ranging between 11 to 20 years, 24% for a period ranging from 21 to 30 years; only 8% of the sample had been living in the city from 31 to 45 years (table 10.8)

TABLE 10.8 Illustrates the period the respondent had lived in Jeddah

Less than 5 years	32%
From 6 to 15 years	25%
From 16 to 25 years	24%
From 26 to 35 years	16%
From 36 to 45 years	2%
More than 46 years	1%

From the above table, it is therefore possible to assume that the sample is, to some extent, accustomed to the environment around them, thus their evaluation is assumed valuable to be indicative and reliable.

Evaluation of the appearance, condition and use of nearby open spaces was the content of the second question. 49% of the sample rated the general conditions of the nearby open space as good. Table 10.9 illustrate that existing situation in terms of conditions, approaching the site by foot or pedestrian movement around site were generally good. But in terms of privacy for women, 66% of the sample rated it as bad. This is because many near by open spaces were not suitable for the use of women. This is also an indication that planning and design of nearby open spaces must consider the privacy of women and to protect them from exposure to others.

TABLE 10.9 Represents how the respondents describe the recreational area next to their house.

Respondent's description	Good	Bad	Do not know
General conditions	72 %	23 %	5 %
Means of approach on foot	48 %	37 %	15 %
Pedestrian movement around the site	56 %	31 %	13 %
Means of approach by car	77 %	18 %	5 %
Traffic circulation	63 %	37 %	0 %
<b>Privacy for women</b>	23 %	<b>66 %</b>	11 %
The site as a social encouragement and playing with others	37 %	46 %	17 %
The correspondence to climatic factors	38 %	46 %	16 %
Children safety	47 %	47 %	4 %

General respondent's opinion about the neighbourhood or other alternative outdoor recreational areas were generally rated as 'good', while the privacy for women have been rated as bad and very bad, i.e. 66 % of the respondents were not satisfied about the degree of privacy, which confirms that planners and designers of outdoor

recreational areas were over-looked the local culture, religion and traditions of users by, for example, not adequately designing to satisfy the users' demand for privacy.

The previous table shows that 8 of the 9 factors were rated by respondents as good. The 'good' rating for these ranged from 72% for general conditions to children safety 47%. In contrast, 66% of respondents rated privacy for women as bad. In asking respondents to categorise the degree of privacy within the outdoor recreational site, over 66% ranked the level of privacy for women between very bad and bad, only 6% of them said it excellent, and when the researcher referred to the sample, it was found that 3% of the total respondents were not Muslims. Their idea of the degree of privacy differs from Muslims, some of them do not bother to cover their women's faces and allow exposing arms, legs and most of the women's body to be seen by strangers. This is because the degree of privacy level required are different from one society to another. From the Islamic point of view women are not allowed to uncover their faces in the presence of non Mahram (strangers and unknown men), while in other countries women are free to swim, almost, naked. Accordingly their privacy varies widely from that of Muslim women who must not expose any part of their bodies in public areas. Of those who said that the privacy is good (17%), some of them maintained their privacy by developing their own setting up tents, arranging cars as barriers, or camping at a reasonable distance, beyond the visual corridors or the sight of others. There is a difference in the men/women responses towards privacy satisfaction. Figure 10.4 and table 10.10 illustrates the difference between the men's and the women's responses to privacy levels in nearby or alternative neighbourhood outdoor recreational spaces.

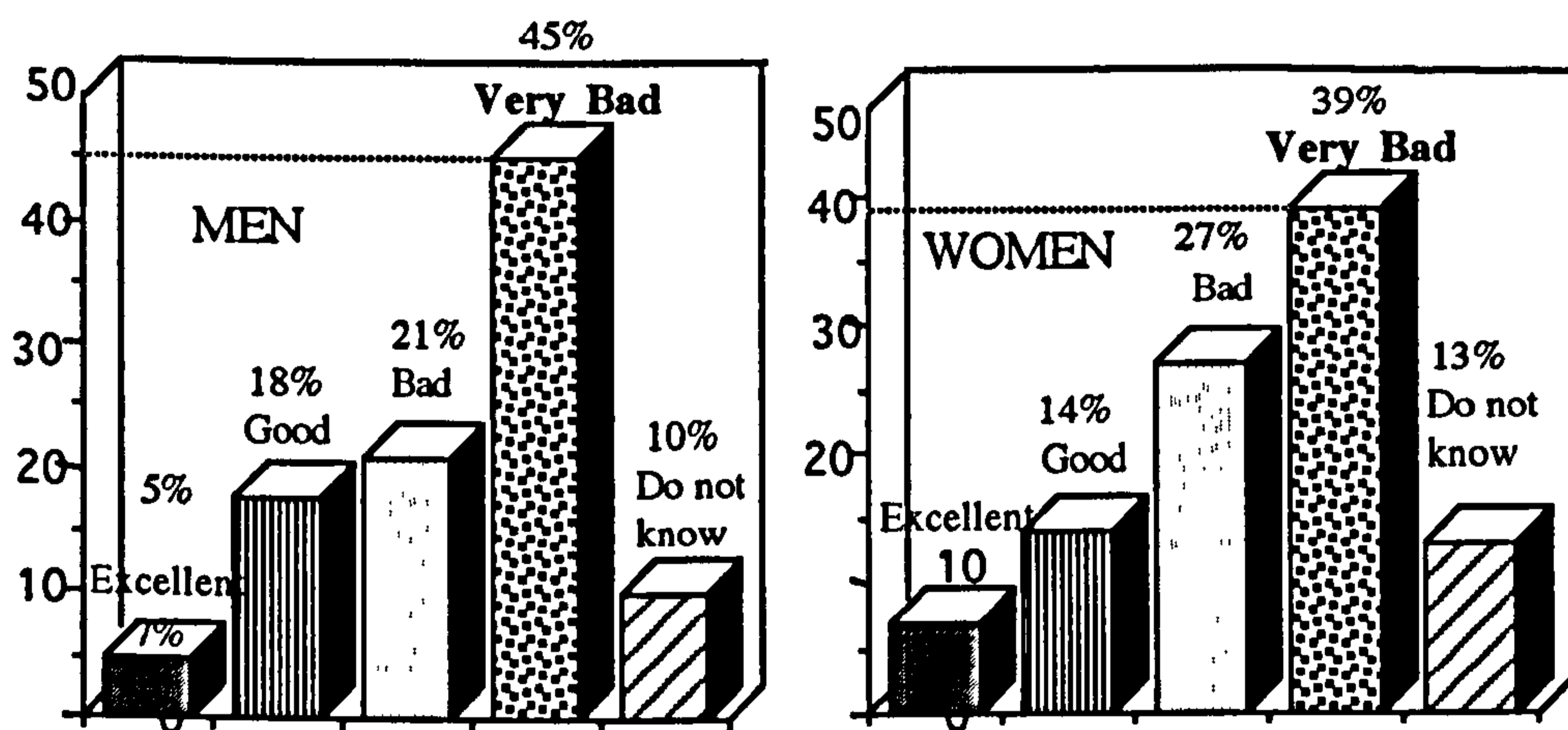
TABLE: 10.10 Cross-tabulation of the relationship between respondent's description of the level of privacy for women in near-by outdoor open space to respondent's home by gender

Variables	Male (n= 136)	Female (n= 71)	Total (N= 205)
GOOD	n=32 24%	n=15 21%	n=47 22%
BAD	n=90 66%	n=47 66%	n=137 67%
DO NOT KNOW	n=14 10%	n=9 13%	n=23 12%

DF: 4      Total Chi-Square: 1.95      p = .745



From figure 10.4, the majority of women and men rank the privacy degree as bad. The variation between respondents related to several social and physical reasons. The social reasons were related to the background of respondents and their culture. As mentioned before only 78% of respondents were Saudis, while the other percentage of 32% were different nationalities from another countries where their cultures and perception of privacy differs from Saudi's culture. Attitudes of non-Saudi were different from the Saudis. The non-Saudi believed more than the Saudis that there were no problems. In relation to Saudi behaviour, they preferred separation between sexes within the same open space, or the need to improve the privacy of whole family in the same place.



THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN MEN'S AND WOMEN'S RESPONSES TO PRIVACY LEVEL

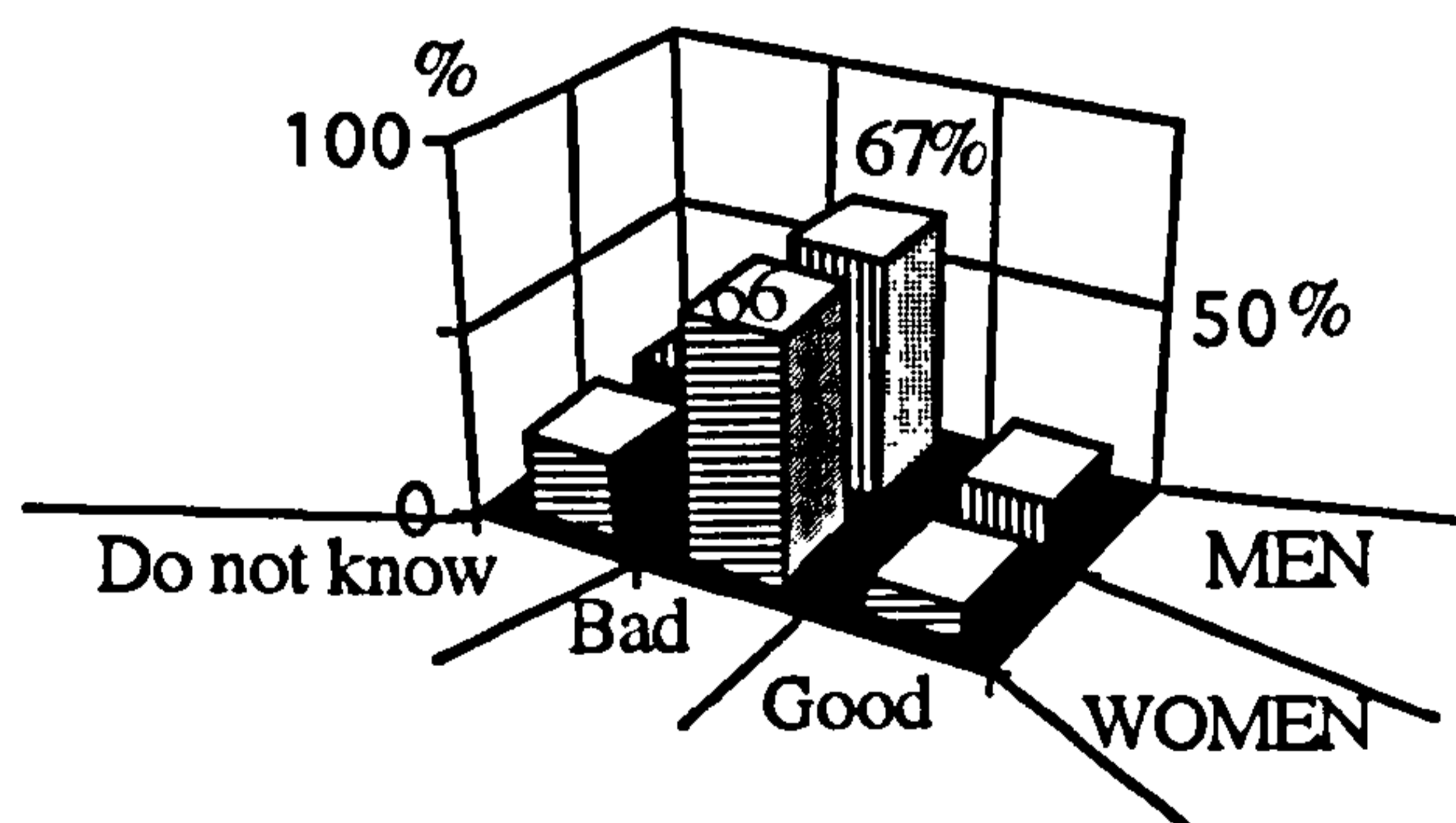
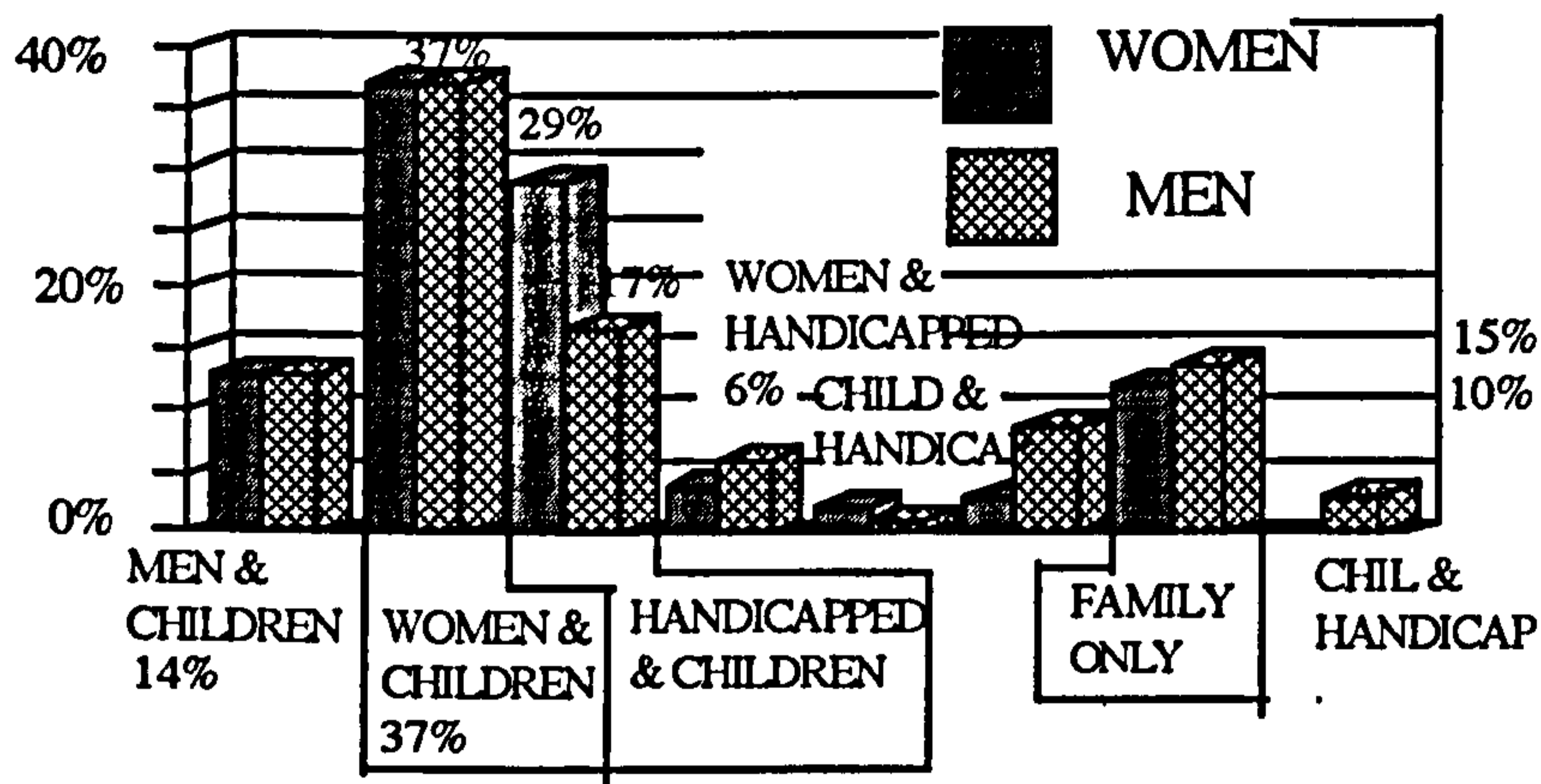


FIGURE 10.4 Illustrates the difference between men's and women's responses to privacy level in near-by or alternative neighbourhood outdoor recreational spaces.

The last question in this section aimed to discover for whom would respondent give priority in designing outdoor recreational areas (figure 10.5). Most of the sample give priority in designing outdoor recreational open spaces to suit women and children's leisure pattern and way of life. This is because women and children were given less consideration in utilising outdoor social spaces.



**FIGURE 10.5** Chart illustrates the responses to the priority in designing outdoor recreational areas.

## QUESTIONNAIRE RESULTS: THIRD PART

### RECREATIONAL ACTIVITIES, SERVICES AND THE DESIGN OF JEDDAH'S CORNICHE

**T**HE QUESTIONNAIRE'S last part aimed to explore the main recreational activities, services and the design of Jeddah's Corniche. What are the main factors that encourage people to spend their leisure time in the Corniche, and their satisfaction in relation to family privacy. The sample was asked to select the most important element to be provided in the Corniche. In addition, this section of the questionnaire aimed, also, to know what people want, problems, assessments, and their suggestions and how much time they spend in the Corniche.

The first question aimed to discover the main factors that encourage respondent to spend the leisure time in the Corniche ( table 10.11). This may be helpful in determining

these factors so they can be provided in less used areas. Knowing what people want will help to increase their satisfaction. The identification of those factors might help designers to provide or maintain those elements within each design process of outdoor leisure activity.

**TABLE 10.11** The main factors that encourage people to spend their leisure time in Jeddah's Corniche.

<b>No</b>	<b>The stimulating factors</b>	<b>Percent</b>
1	To see the sea and the natural views	91 %
2	Because of children (public and private amusement parks)	52 %
3	No adequate nearby open space	51 %
4	It is the only available space	47 %
5	Give a chance for women to spend their leisure time	45 %
6	Open spaces for children and family	36 %
7	For driving for pleasure around different areas of the Corniche park	35 %
8	The general beauty of the recreational area	35 %
9	Adjacent to mosque	35 %
10	The general public seating places	25 %
11	Ease of access	23 %
12	Sea games (Swimming, fishing, boating, skiing, etc.)	15 %
13	Other things	13 %

The above table explores the main factors that attract users to spend their leisure time. The identification of those factors may help designers to provide better spatial and landscape elements within each design process of outdoor leisure activity. The respondents were given eight main attractions to outdoor open spaces. Then they were asked to choose the most important three factors. The data shows that the first main factor that influences users to select certain space(s) is the universal attraction which is the sea. 91 % of the respondents visit the outdoor open space because of its proximity to the sea coast. The second more important reasons (52%) is for the sake of the children. The third significant factor (51%) to allow families to spend their leisure. As mentioned before, the main factor that encourage of respondent to spend their leisure time in Jeddah's Corniche is to see the sea and natural views. In contrast, one factor (91%) out

of 11 factors (under 52%) raise a significant question. Would people visit the Corniche if there is no sea or natural views? From the previous table (10.9), it seems only less than 52% of them may visit the Corniche. In other words, the overall design and planning of the Corniche was not enough to encourage the majority of people. The sea, to a large extent, is the only magnet.

The second question aimed to explore respondent's satisfaction in relation to family privacy in Corniche sites (table 10.12). 66% of respondents rate their family privacy in Corniche sites as "too little." In contrast 26% of them rate it as "about right" and 2% as too much, while 6% were did not know.

TABLE 10.12 Respondent's satisfaction in relation to family privacy in Corniche sites.

Variables	Male (n= 185)	Female (n= 87)	Total (N= 272)
Too little	68 %	62 %	66 %
About the right	25 %	28 %	26 %
Too much	1 %	5 %	12 %
Do not know	6 %	6 %	6 %

DF: 3      Total Chi-Square: 5.737      p = .125

This fluctuation in response to privacy satisfaction may refer to the layout of the site, its degree of use, distance between different sites and the formation of three-dimensional structures. In addition, some respondents were not concerned about the privacy due to their religious and educational backgrounds. From the table (10.13), the more educated the person the less he or she concerned about privacy issues.

TABLE 10.13 Cross-tabulation of the relationship between respondent's satisfaction in relation to family privacy in Corniche sites by level of education (question No 2 in the third part of the questionnaire) (N= 271)

Scale	Uneduc ated (n=4)	Read only (n=2)	Read & write (n=12)	Elemen tary (n=24)	Interme diate (n=37)	Second ary (n=72)	Colleg e (n=6)	Univers ity (n=90)	Postgra duate (n=21)	Total (n=27)
Too little	100	100	92	79	68	63	67	61	62	66
About right	0	0	8	13	27	25	17	34	24	26
Too much	0	0	0	0	3	6	0	0	0	2
Do not know	0	0	0	8	3	7	17	4	14	6

DF: 27      Total Chi-Square: 25.684      p = .5362

Question No 3 of the third part of the questionnaire aimed to know if there is any reason that may prevent family ladies from using outdoor recreational areas. As expected 87% of the respondents indicated that there are some reasons. The following question asked the respondent if there are reasons to indicate the most important three reasons they can think of that may prevent families from using outdoor recreational sites (table 10.14).

**TABLE 10.14 The most important three reasons that may prevent the family from using the Corniche for active recreational activities.**

No	THE STIMULATING FACTORS	%
1	Bothering adults (bachelor-males) who pass by or during participation in recreational pursuits	89 %
2	For religious reasons, because the family is not allowed, or prefers not to participate in recreational activities in exposed areas (lack of privacy)	87 %
3	Too close a distance between sitting areas, and lack of visual screen to preserve privacy for ladies	60 %
4	Proximity of traffic flow and pedestrian movements to outdoor recreational sites	56 %
5	Too crowded	49 %
6	Due to lack of sufficient maintenance to existing recreational facilities	16 %

The previous table is an indication which reflect users' opinions and reasons of the main things that deter their family from using and enjoying the Corniche for outdoor recreational activities. Some of the main research questions (chapter 8) were centred around why families could not participate in outdoor active recreational activities. In specific, 89% of respondents suffer from privacy intrusion and bothering by bachelors passing-by or during their involvement in recreational activities. This means the landscape design did not adequately respect tradition, culture and religion of the local peoples nor their environment. By satisfying people's religious demand, visitor satisfaction can be increased. It is obvious from the above table that the Corniche does not meet the requirements of Saudi families. Three out of six most important reasons were involved around the problems resulted from the poor design of outdoor recreational sites. 87% of the sample indicated that religious constraints prevent their ladies from enjoying the active outdoor recreations. It is the responsibility of planners, designers and all related environmental designers to adequately set the layout of the environment around

people with full respect to their religious requirements. By maintaining these religious requirements and not to expose women to other eyes and to traffic movements future provision will be better designed and better managed.

The previous table (10.14) also shows that there are three main landscape design elements which are not provided in Jeddah's Corniche. First, many recreational areas were juxtaposed critically to each other. 60% of the sample indicated the too close distance between recreational sites cause direct visual corridors to women's realms. 56% of the sample indicate the proximity of circulation and people's movement will prevent their family from using the Corniche. 49% of the sample mentioned the sites were too crowded. This means people were not satisfied with what is presented. Because the basic landscape design principles were over-looked in planning and design of the Corniche. There are no protected and temporary-private outdoor recreational sites, with adequate and articulated visual corridors and visual contacts between the sites. Hierarchy, organisation, order, space articulation and three-dimensional principles are the most important landscape elements to be provided in every outdoor recreational site. This is the logical way to solve, to a large extent, problems identified in chapter 6 within the site; and to all outdoor recreational sites elsewhere.

In order to know what detracts from visitors' enjoyment, or does the Corniche offer what people want, the next question (No. 5 in the third part of the questionnaire) aimed to answer these questions. In fact, the respondents were asked to select five out of fourteen landscape planning and design elements they would most like to see provided in developing leisure provision (table 10.15). Not surprisingly, 71% of them asked to provide more shaded and green open spaces, which is obvious selection in such hot environment. In contrast, the other 4 most important elements were concerned about how to prevent bachelors from being in families' domain. 56% of respondents asked for complete and adequate degree of privacy for women. This is their religious and compulsory right to be provided carefully in every outdoor recreational areas. Similarly, 56% of the sample required the planning and design of outdoor recreational areas specially for Saudi. Of course children play spaces and public services must also be included in shaping the outdoor recreational sites.

TABLE 10.15 The most important elements respondents would like to see provided in developing leisure provision.

No	RESPONDENT'S REQUIRED ELEMENTS	%
1	Shaded and green open spaces	71 %
2	Prevent bachelors from driving within family areas or mixed with their sites	65 %
3	Complete and adequate degree of privacy for women	56 %
4	Open spaces or new gardens designed specially for Saudi way of life	56 %
5	Children play spaces	50 %
6	Toilets	47 %
7	Mosques or open spaces to pray in due time within 10 minutes walk	40 %
8	Ease of finding car park adjacent or near the recreational sites	36 %
9	Regulate or prevent sales men from recreational areas	24 %
10	Provide the means of satisfying visitors regards to space/safety feeling	23 %
11	Ease of approach and suitability of location	18 %
12	Providing adequate recreational facilities that suit each member of the family	16 %
13	Regulating and controlling the use of outdoor recreational spaces	12 %
14	Light shopping and recreational areas	9 %

It is worth mentioning that all the above elements must be provided, if possible, in each outdoor recreational area. This is because visitor's requirements of the previous landscape elements will increase performance and satisfaction levels. But how do visitors' assess the site layouts in affecting their satisfaction in terms of general layout of landscape physical settings? The following argument will seeks the answer.

### **A. Privacy from other adjacent recreational sites**

Question No 6 of the third part of the questionnaire aims to discover respondent's range of satisfaction in relation to privacy from other adjacent recreational sites, privacy from passers-by, views to next areas, size and safety from circulation. Table 10.16 show two distinct contrasting points. First, in relation to the views and the beauty of the Corniche 85% of the respondents were satisfied. In contrast, 70% of the respondents were dissatisfied about the intrusion of their privacy from passers-by. Table 10.16A

represents how respondent's assessed his or her satisfaction in terms of general layout of landscape physical setting. In particular, their assessment of privacy from other adjacent recreational sites.

TABLE 10.16 Aspects affecting people's satisfaction in terms of general layout of landscape physical settings.

No	Respondent's assessment	Satisfied	Not satisfied
A	Privacy from other adjacent recreational sites	19%	69%
B	Privacy from passers-by	10%	80%
C	Views to next areas	85%	9%
D	Size of the recreational site	30%	61%
E	Safety & security from pedestrian and traffic flow	37%	56%

TABLE: 10. 16 A Cross-tabulation of the relationship between respondent's assessment of privacy for women from other adjacent recreational sites and gender

Variables	Male (n= 181)	Female (n= 86)	Total (N=267)
SATISFIED	20 %	16 %	19 %
INDIFFERENT	14 %	6 %	11 %
DISSATISFIED	66 %	78 %	70 %

DF: 4      Total Chi-Square: 18.3      p = .001

The above table shows that 70% of the sample were dissatisfied with privacy in relation to adjacent sites. It also shows that female respondents were more dissatisfied about privacy than males. This is because women often feel the lack of privacy that limiting their opportunities to participate in outdoor activities. In addition, females are more concerned with privacy level than males, because they feel and suffer from the lack of the adequate privacy more than male. In fact, the probability of 0.0011 level represents a statistically significant relationship between the variables (men and women). They themselves feel the annoyance caused by bachelors, where sometimes, the bachelors walk through places of families causing them much nuisance to them, and further more, there is little space to maintain privacy when the sites are crowded.

The next section of question 6 (6B) aimed to discover their assessments of privacy from passers-by.



## **B Privacy from passers-by**

Movement of cars and pedestrians walking through places of families, the lack of adequate shelters and the lack of improvised screens in all directions cause privacy intrusion. 80% of both male and females were not satisfied with the degree of the level privacy in the Corniche Park. Again, the data show that (table 10 16B) the percentage of females (85%) was higher than the percentage of males (76%) in regard to dissatisfaction with privacy levels. It again demonstrates that women are more concerned with privacy than men.

TABLE 10.16 B Cross-tabulation of the relationship between respondent's assessment to privacy for women from passers-by by gender

<b>Variables</b>	<b>Male (n= 183)</b>	<b>Female (n= 85)</b>	<b>Total (N=268)</b>
<b>SATISFIED</b>	10 %	7 %	9 %
<b>INDIFFERENT</b>	13 %	7 %	11 %
<b>DISSATISFIED</b>	77 %	86 %	80 %

DF: 4      Total Chi-Square: 7.136      p = .129

Gender by their assessments to privacy of  $p = .129$  represents that there is no strong statistical significant relationship between the variables. That is to say, there is no difference between men and women in their assessment toward privacy satisfaction from passers-by.

## **C Views to next areas**

This section of the questionnaire shows 86% of respondents (Table: 10. 16C ) were, in general, satisfied with the views and the appearance of the next areas of Jeddah's Corniche and 9% were not satisfied. This is because every one has his or her personal taste of beauty towards views to the surrounding landscape. But, there is a contrasting difference of whether to see the environment or to see who participates in this

environment. For the sake of this discussion, the aim is to allow people to see good views or other exposed outdoor recreational areas without being seen. It is good idea to allow people enjoying the sense of beatification; but with limited cone of vision (the angle of seen surroundings). This cone of vision or visual corridors must be thoughtfully considered to protect privacy of users while at the same time provide them with the most and functional attractiveness.

TABLE 10. 16 C Cross-tabulation of the relationship between respondents' assessment of views to next areas by gender

Variables	Male (n= 186)	Female (n= 85)	Total (N=271)
SATISFIED	84%	91%	86%
INDIFFERENT	7%	2%	5%
DISSATISFIED	9%	7%	9%

DF: 4 Total Chi-Square 3.24 p = .518

#### D Size of sitting areas

The size of sitting areas influences peoples' movement, attitudes and behaviour. Narrow spaces cause crowding and the negative consequences of high density areas with their familiar problems of social tensions, privacy intrusion and limiting the recreational activities. In response to the question concerning the size of the sitting areas that were provided for recreational open spaces table 10.16D shows that 61% of all respondents are dissatisfied with the existing sizes allocated for sitting areas. Women were more dissatisfied about the size of the existing outdoor recreational sites on Jeddah's Corniche.

TABLE 10. 16D Cross tabulation of the relationship between the size of recreational site and gender

**Satisfaction with the size of recreational site by Sex**

Variables	Male (n= 182)	Female (n= 83)	Total (N=265)
SATISFIED	36%	19%	31%
INDIFFERENT	10%	6%	8%
DISSATISFIED	54%	75%	61%

DF: 4 Total Chi-Square: 15.8 p = 0.003

75% of women respondents were dissatisfied with the size of the sitting areas, against 54% of males. This difference is significant at  $p=0.003$ . The reasons behind these differences were related to the site's physical and spatial characteristics. In addition, this difference between male and female responses could be related to women's greater concern for privacy. Also, inadequate size of the site will limit the freedom, movement and participation of women. Often very large sitting areas allow people to allocate themselves apart from each other, where visual privacy and visual contacts among them can be easily maintained. 61 % of respondents mentioned that the spaces were small, which in turn represents most of the sitting areas of the Corniche are not large enough to accommodate various recreational passive or active recreational pursuits.

The next question aimed to examine how respondents assess the safety and security of their women and children from pedestrian and traffic flow.

#### **D Safety and security**

This question aimed to discover respondent's assessment of safety and security for children and women from pedestrian and traffic flow (table 10.17). A five point rating scale was used to measure satisfaction. 57 % of the sample were not satisfied with the existing level of safety and security, with less than 37% satisfied and 6 % feeling indifferent. The point now is why 37% of the respondents felt that the safety and security were satisfactory. One of the reasons may be that there were some respondents who thought that this questionnaire was to examine their opinions about the governments policy in achieving security, accordingly they were afraid to say that there was no security, which also affects the value of responses. For example, one of the respondents asked the researcher to swear and to give a promise that his information would not reach the government. The researcher gave the promise that this information will be used in analysing the research questionnaire. Then the respondent who was not Saudi, said to the researcher that: *"The only thing to help people to live in peace without bachelors' interfering with families is to educate the Islamic teaching to the youth of Saudi Arabia,*

and to find other recreational areas for them, to be designed within the frame of (Islamic Law and Teaching), as a means to release the potential energy of any youth to be released in beneficial things." The other reason perhaps some people did feel safe and secure, as they said.

In fact, the above table shows there is no gender significant difference in relation to security and safety ( $p= 0.32$ ); therefore no gender difference in as whereas there is in A to D (privacy and size of recreational sites). That might be explained a little more by the following.

The feeling of being seen or being exposed to others' eyes will have different effects on both male or female. A female, by her nature, fears being harmed either visually, orally or harassed by actual touch or attacks. Secure place or space will help in protecting her from others to a large extent. On the other hand, male's nature characterised him to be strong and to not cover his face or all of his body. Therefore, his feeling of privacy not as the feeling of women. Those differences cause a significant deference of perceiving or satisfaction towards privacy or size of sites.

TABLE 10. 17 Cross tabulation of the relationship for respondent's assessment for safety and security of women and children from pedestrian and traffic flow by gender

**Satisfaction with the safety and security of recreational site by Sex**

Variables	Male (n= 185)	Female (n= 86)	Total (N=271)
SATISFIED	37 %	38 %	37 %
INDIFFERENT	6 %	7 %	6 %
DISSATISFIED	57 %	55 %	57 %

DF:4

Total Chi-Square: 4.72

$p = 0.32$

### Noise level

Question number 7 examined how people respond to noise levels within the outdoor recreational areas (table 10.18).

TABLE 10.18 Cross tabulation of the relationship for respondent's feeling about noise in Jeddah's Corniche by gender

Variables	Male (n= 185)	Female (n= 86)	Total (N=271)
Problem	25%	30%	27%
Minor problem	59%	56%	58%
No problem	16%	14%	15%

DF: 3

Total Chi-Square: 13.884

$p = 0.003$

Twenty seven percent of the sample were not bothered about the noise. 58% of them considered it to be a minor problem. 15 % felt there was no problem. In fact, the Corniche has succeeded in satisfying visitors' sense of beauty; while it has failed to satisfy them in terms of privacy, size and safety issues. Table 10.19 represents the main aspects affecting people's satisfaction in terms of general layout of landscape physical settings

Although noise in the Corniche has been considered by respondents as a minor problem that does not mean to accept this problem in Jeddah's Corniche. It means people may be more concerned towards more serious problems that needs immediate actions to be solved.

The next question directed to respondent to examine why he or she choose a particular site. In order to investigate why did respondent choose a particular outdoor recreational site, question No. 8 aimed to explore the answer (table 10.19). As expected 72% of the respondents choose the Corniche because of its location next to the sea-line. In fact, one factor out of nine others was the main reason that attract people to the Corniche. In contrast, 41% of the sample choose the site for children. It was not surprisingly to find all the sample rated the reasons that encouraged them to visit the Corniche were under 50%. This is an indication that there are no strong attractive features attract people to the Corniche with exception of the universal attraction of the sea and some outdoor recreational amusements, i.e. it is very important to increase visitors' satisfaction to encouraging them visit outdoor recreational site. It is the duty of the designer to increase the percentage of 38% suitable for family to maximum of 90% suitability level.

TABLE 10.19 Reasons indicted by respondents to choose particular outdoor recreational site.

No.	RESPONDENT'S CHOICE	%
1	Because it is adjacent to the sea coast (sea-line)	72 %
2	Suitable for children	41 %
3	Suitable for family	38 %
4	It was vacant during seeking for outdoor recreational place	37 %
5	It is close to private or public amusements (leisure places)	29 %
6	Very attractive	26 %
7	Because it is faraway from pedestrian and traffic circulation	20 %
8	Ample open spaces	20 %
9	Other reasons	6 %

In relation to the outdoor recreational opportunities visitor's would most like to be provided in Jeddah's Corniche, the respondents were given six important landscape principles and have been asked to choose the three most important of them. Those questions (question No. 9 the third part of the questionnaire table 10.20) were concerning the presence/absence of recreational playing areas, relaxation places, separate female from male areas, sea-based facilities, and other special design chalets for families, and for bachelors. The data indicates that the most important thing needed in the Corniche is separation between men and women. 68% of respondents were demanding to have separate areas in Corniche Park to avoid mixing with bachelors and other groups. This is another indication that Saudi families were concerned by the privacy issue. This problem needs immediate action to be solved, as a mean to increase users satisfaction.

TABLE 10.20 The five most important requirements sought by respondents in Jeddah's Corniche

No	RESPONDENTS' REQUIREMENTS	%
1	Separation between men and women areas for the sake of privacy for ladies	68 %
2	Relaxation places with shade trees and general outdoor recreational facilities	64 %
3	Specially designed chalets for families and for male-bachelors	59 %
4	The need for more sea games (boats, skiing, etc.)	45 %
5	More recreational services (leisure centres, aquarium, pases etc.).	30 %

The highest percentages of the previous table represents the most needed to be provided in shaping outdoor recreational areas. Separation, relaxation and specially designed chalets which suites both families and other separated for male-bachelors. Less than 11% of the sample asked for other things such as ample open spaces, natural sand beach and camping areas.

The next question aimed to discover respondents' categorisation of their privacy level for their families (ladies) while they are sitting on the pavement of the Corniche area. Each respondent was asked to scale his or her family's (ladies') privacy level as too little, about right, too much or did not know (table 10.21).

TABLE 10.21 Respondent's categorisation of their family's (lady's) privacy level while they are sitting on the pavements of the Corniche

Variables	Male (n= 181)	Female (n= 86)	Total (N= 267)
Too little	62%	69%	64%
About the right	17%	8%	14%
Too much	5%	6%	5%
Do not know	15%	17%	16%

DF: 1      Total Chi-Square: 3.873      p = .267

In fact, the above tables demonstrate that privacy level and bothering by male-bachelors all combine together to decrease users' satisfaction and cause them to ask for more appropriate design and outdoor recreational provisions. Lack of privacy and inadequate outdoor recreational areas led people to spend little time in outdoor areas. Question No 11 aimed to know how much of time respondents spend in the Corniche for outdoor recreational pursuits (table 10.22)

TABLE 10.22 How much of time respondents spend in the Corniche for outdoor recreational pursuits

No	DURATION	%
1	Less than an hour	6 %
2	From 1 to 2	42 %
3	From 3 to 4	38 %
4	From 5 to 6	7 %
5	More than 6 hours	3 %
6	The whole day	3 %
7	The whole weekends	1 %

It is obvious from the previous table that 42% of respondents usually spent from an hour to two hours. 80% of them spent from an hour to four hours, while less than 14% spent more than 5 hours in the Corniche. This raise the question why some people spent only one to 3 or four hours. Of course that may relate to the availability and amount of leisure each respondents can have. But may be there are other reasons which influence visitors to leave the site, or visit the site in special days. Question No 12 aimed

to discover on which day(s) of the week respondents prefer to spend their leisure time (Table 10.23). As expected the most preferred day or days are the weekend. This is because most people have the greatest part of leisure time, as obvious, on weekends or holidays. But what are the most important factors that cause visitors to leave the outdoor recreational site, may be in spite of their desires to spend more of their leisure time in outdoor recreational areas. The answer can be achieved from the table 10.24. In fact, question No 13 aimed to discover why or what the most important factors cause visitors to leave the outdoor recreational site. The respondent was given seven main factors that may influence him or her to leave the site

TABLE 10.23 The preferred day(s) to visit the Corniche

No	Day	Percent
1	Sat	1%
2	Sun	1%
3	Monday	2%
4	Holidays	13%
5	Wednesday & Thursday	6%
6	Thursday	31%
7	Friday	17%
8	Friday & Thursday	29%

TABLE 10.24 The most important factors cause visitors to leave the outdoor recreational sitting areas of the Corniche

**Cross tabulation between respondent's reasons by gender**

No.	Respondent's reasons to leave the outdoor recreational site	Men %	Women %	Total %	Chi-Square	P.
1	Too much anxiety from other visitors (bachelor-males)	49 %	62 %	53 %	4.03	0.045
2	End of leisure time	59 %	19 %	46 %	38.922	0.0001
3	Privacy intrusion from other groups	43 %	50 %	45 %	1.315	0.252
4	Too many visitors (high density - crowded)	39 %	56 %	45 %	7.03	0.008
5	Feeling of boredom, routine and monotony	29 %	42 %	34 %	4.03	0.0447
6	To find a better place	30 %	39 %	33 %	1.926	0.1652
7	To drive around different recreational sites (pleasure driving)	25 %	39 %	30 %	4.912	0.0267
8	Other reasons	16 %	17 %	17 %	0.494	0.7813

It is worth mentioning that the last question of the questionnaire can reflect the main hidden problems that visitors feel such as anxiety, crowding, privacy intrusions, feeling of boredom or the trouble of finding a better outdoor recreational place are all indications that the existing outdoor recreational opportunities are not suitable for local



people to enjoy the outings which in turn decrease their satisfaction and limit their demand for more appropriate outdoor provisions.

## RESPONDENT'S COMMENTS, IDEAS AND SUGGESTIONS

**T**HE FOLLOWING are a selection of comments representing some of the respondents opinions. These comments were the main selection from the questionnaire's responses to the last question of the third part (Question number 14). They may reflect some issues or demands like design, maintenance or the desires of visitors to be provided in Jeddah's Corniche. The final part of the questionnaire was intended to give a chance for the respondents to express their opinions, recommendations, solutions or criticism. The proportion of sample answer question 14 is 12% (n=30). The main points that were extracted from all respondents comments of the questionnaire were various demands, complaints and desires which all, to a large extent, revolved around the physical and spatial structures of outdoor recreational areas, and the demand for adequate opportunities, services, ample areas and a sense of being in a secluded protected and comfortable outdoor recreational sites. In order to determine the frequency, for example, of their different concerns, the following quotations will be numbered, and a list of its main concerns or requirements will be followed. At the end of this section, a summary of the main respondent's concerns will be tabulated, discussed and analysed.

### Respondents' answers to question No.14 of the questionnaire

A 45 year old head of the family while they spent their leisure time in a very late evening around 9 p.m. in Al-Rahmah Mosque. (Some visitors preferred to spend their leisure times in or around Mosques, to pray in due time, for the suitable lighting, water, electricity and toilets), he said:

*(1)"The lighting in some areas, such as Al-Rahmah Mosque deters some families from sitting in the courtyards of the Mosque. In addition to that, the lack of screens between sitting areas cause privacy intrusion. . . "*

- Intensity of light cause privacy intrusion.

- Lack of screens between sitting areas cause also privacy intrusion.

The other comments, which show the demand for designated outdoor recreational areas, They said:

(2) *"To provide special places that are suitable for children and some for adults. Establish places for prayers, with its toilets. very crowded at the Corniche during weekends forces me and my family to visit the Corniche during week days. restaurants... tents to be rented ... sea services... electricity... boats to be rented.."*

- Provide special places for each categories of the society.
- Provide places for prayers.
- Solve the problem of crowded sites (the need for more ample spaces)
- The need for more public services (restaurants, tents, sea services, electricity and rented recreational facilities.

(3) *"One of the reasons that stop ladies from visiting the Corniche is the lack of toilets"*

- The lack of public toilets prevent ladies from visiting the Corniche.

(4) *To put screens and provide special places for families that preserve an adequate degree of privacy... Provide ample open spaces for children to deter them from being in danger with streets and traffic.. Provide 'first aid' for emergencies.*

- Lack of screens between sitting areas cause privacy intrusion.
- Solve the problem of crowded sites (the need for more ample spaces)
- The inadequate location and distribution of outdoor recreational areas and its location near traffic flow expose children and families to danger of traffic and cause privacy intrusion.
- Lack of first aid services.

(5) *"...to provide shelters on wide beaches, and each shelter must have its own access. To provide dunes towards the sea where each family could have its own private space.*

- The needs to provide more shelters
- The need to widen the existing narrow beaches.
- The idea of using fingers structures (dunes, earth perms, rocks, and artificial mountain-like sea-landscape design), where each space between the fingers towards sea may provide more sense of being in more secure and private three-dimensional or volumetric spaces.

The previous respondent was asking for the provision of more shelters on wide natural beaches, and each shelter must have its own access. This respondent was a professor at the university of Umm-Al Qura, Makkah. He asked for completion of the necessary public services such as portable water (drinking water), toilets, and electricity. To increase the amount of spaces that are intended for families.

Another comment shows that local people prefer their family to mix with other families (women with women only) for social contact and encourage time to spent in play and chatting together, but in very adequate and preserved outdoor open spaces. He said:

(6) *"We prefer our family to mix with others for social encouragement and the exchange of ideas... We did not visit the Corniche during weekends because of crowding."*

- Some families were not able to visit Jeddah's Corniche during weekends because of crowding

There were many comments and complaints about the level and standards of some private amusement areas where the design or the arrangement of different areas did not preserve the traditional way of life and caused mixing between gender. For example, the following comments show how visitors perceive the existing facilities.

*(7)"Corniche lacks the main public services (Drinking water), WC.*

*The tremendous amount of amusement parks were a negative phenomenon (the ordinary people might think it is an excellent phenomenon). The amusement and outing private areas, which were intended for families were not adequate and it is shamed by conservative people (by 75 %) because of its negative use by weak religious and selfishness people.*

*The Corniche needs to be planted with various trees to give shade.*

*The Corniche is a recreational area therefore the municipality must limit or not allow high rise building to take place . . . otherwise the visitor will find himself under residential buildings when using the recreational areas."*

- The lack of public services decreases visitor's satisfaction.
- The design of many of amusement parks were a giants the desire of conservative people.
- The need for more adequate planting schemes which based on landscape architectural concepts. For example, the use of various planting techniques to creates space articulation, shades, screens and outdoor rooms.
- The municipality should preserve the nature of seaside and to not allow city buildings to degrading the sea nature. (It is preferable to bring nature to the city, and it is a big mistake to bring city to the nature).

In regard to the social problems and to reflect how some visitors suffer from the interference of bachelors and their intrusions to visitors' privacy , especially ladies, the following comments magnifying some hidden-problems of visitors, they said:

*(8)"We ask and beg you to take care of the recreational areas and to prevent bachelors from being present within family areas, which causes us to become very nervous and we could not relax and enjoy the recreational facilities with our children..."To clean the Corniche of the rubbish and dirty materials, lifted on the sea and its beaches, which cause a very nasty smell. And to prevent the huge number of bachelors who they interfere with families."*

- The great demand of most of the Corniche's visitors to prevent male-bachelors from being within the domain of family areas.
- Presence of male-bachelors may cause social tension between head of the families and singles.
- The presence of bachelors may , also, limit the freedom of family to enjoy the recreational facilities. In addition, that also cause families to be a more passive oriented than active participation in outdoor opportunities.

- From respondents' point of view, the Corniche's maintenance needs to be more enhanced to clean it from the rubbish and dirty materials.
- The smell of Jeddah's Corniche needs to be more fragrant and pleasant.

(9) *"I prefer to find places intended only for men and others for families to decrease the amount of bothering from bachelors"*

- The idea of providing separated outdoor recreational areas some for bachelors and others for families.

(10) *"I suggest the provision of sheltered areas, chalets on sea and screens among them and with reasonable fees."*

- Shelters and screens with reasonable fees

(11) *"To establish more mosques and amusement parks for women only"*

- More praying areas and amusement parks for women use only

(12) *"Areas for women to control car speeds how to cross the streets... Why did the municipality not allocate the South Corniche only for bachelors and the North Corniche to be used only by families..."*

*"The Islamic law must be implemented to enhance the Corniche area..then to punish those bachelors by a special consultant from religious people... and take care to preserve privacy for women".*

- The concerns of respondents also reflected in their needs to control car speeds, and to allow safe cross of the streets.
- Some respondents suggests to restrict the south Corniche for bachelors, and the North Corniche for family use only.
- Some respondents feel that Islamic law must be implemented to enhance the Corniche area.
- The idea of forming a special religious consultant to take care of preserving privacy for women. That may be achieved by direct instruction to visitors, or by time-zoning of outdoor recreational areas. In addition, this consultants must be informed about the layout of every future projects about outdoor recreational areas.

With regard to examining why some people leave the site? the following comments from some conservative Saudi respondents and some landscape architects working with the municipality of Jeddah revealed the following:

(13) *"One of the main reasons that forces us to leave the Corniche is the lack of an attractive and likeable recreational areas without harming the privacy of families.. I believe that the most important factor which helps the enjoyment of any thing is to feel secure and safe... and the psychological feeling which might get worse is when the privacy of the family is intruded upon"*

- The lack of an attractive and likeable outdoor recreational areas.
- The existing outdoor recreational areas harm the privacy of families.
- The need to have more secure and safe places in Jeddah's Corniche.
- The intrusion of ladies privacy cause a negative psychological effect.

One of the questionnaire respondents was a landscape architect in the Municipality of Jeddah who expresses his concerns about Jeddah's Corniche as follows.

(14) *"Some of the reasons people leave the site is the lack of recreational areas that suit all the different ages of the family at one time.*

Then he recommends the following.

*-Do not concentrate all recreational elements in one place, which cause crowding of visitors and insufficient car parking, as well as causing male and females mixing (privacy problems)*

*-Make an adequate landscape solutions to solve the climatic problems of Jeddah's hot and sunny climatic conditions, which help to distribute visitors on all various times , that is to say to get use of morning and noon times*

- Jeddah's Corniche lacks the recreational areas that suit all the different ages of the family at one time.
- The need to decentralise recreational elements all over Jeddah's Corniche to reduces crowding, which in turn reduce the chance of mixing between genders.
- The need to solve the problems of lack of shade in moderate micro-climate.

The following comment represents a typical Saudi family with different children's age groups, and includes more than three ladies and girls. The head of the family said that:

(15) *"Children from 6-15 years old swimming and volley-ball, from 16- 25 years old swimming tennis and other games.*

*One of the reasons that prevent women from participating in the recreational activities is the lack of enough clean areas to sit, because no space is free from rats, insects or remains of foods or even more 'human remains'!"*

- The need to clear outdoor recreational sites from all dirt and insects.

(16) *"The main factor that make us leave the site is the lack of the enjoyable recreational elements to spend the leisure time if it was provided it was annoying because of the mixing of male and female areas. Presence of male-bachelors which enforces woman to cover her face, where accordingly, she hate to sit and to prefer to sit at home to spend her leisure time free and in freedom."*

*My Recommendations:*

- To determine one day only for women, in amusement parks,*
- To allocate places for women only in some restaurants and recreational areas . . . because some existing restaurants allocate special areas for families but it looks like 'a can of a tomato paste 'in which human beings can not feel of freedom and enjoyment.*

- To remove those rocks (the existing Sea-defence system) where they form a good habitat for rats and insects..
- To prevent bachelors sitting on the pavements where they exhibit and bothering families ...prevent bachelors outings or walking among family areas.
- To establish special clubs for women for swimming volleyball etc., on the Corniche with reasonable prices."

*" One of the reasons that deter women from enjoying participation of recreational activities is the lack of recreational facilities that were suitable for women's use because the existing facilities were not adequate to suit women recreational pattern."*

- The Corniche lacks the adequate and safe swimming areas.
- The lack of enough clean areas to sit, also, prevent women from participating in outdoor recreational activities.
- The lack of the more enjoyable recreational elements to spend the leisure time cause some visitors to leave the site.
- If the outdoor recreational areas are provided by adequate and enjoyable elements; the presence of bachelors and their mixture with families cause some families to leave the site.
- The presence of bachelors cause women to cover their faces. When they cover their faces the high temperature also enforce women to leave the site, because the temperature trapped between the veil and women' s face.

Another landscape architect in the Municipality of Jeddah in his respondents to the last question of the questionnaire said:

(17) *"The problem of pollution and bad smell of car exhausts were all needs immediate actions to be solved.*

*The existing Corniche area is not capable of accommodating huge numbers of people who they spend the summer time in Jeddah, specially during holidays and festivals which cause crowding and lack of privacy, therefore I hope to provide new areas with its services".*

- Besides the landscape and privacy problems, pollution and nasty smell of car exhausts needs landscape treatments.
- The inadequate sizes of outdoor recreation of the Corniche cause over-use during peak times, which also cause privacy intrusions.

The Manager of youth welfare in Jeddah has filled one of the questionnaire format and at the end of the questionnaire gives the following comments.

(18) *"The general look was excellent, but there is a need for more public facilities and services. To establish a recreational centre for old and retired people.*

*Some times I have to go to faraway areas to find places that can preserve privacy."*

*“To provide family areas to limit the access of bachelors. . . To cancel some existing artificial lakes, such a Bohyrat Al Qitar (The Train lake) of its mixing and bad design and consume people’s money with out right”*

*“Swimming areas, indications of various depth of sea water, what are the benefits of existing sculptures?”*

- The need for more public facilities and services.
- The need to provide recreational centres for old and retired people.
- The existing condition of Jeddah's Corniche (crowding, privacy intrusion and lack of facilities) cause some people to travel faraway areas to find places that can preserve privacy.
- The need to provide family areas to limit the access of bachelors.
- The idea of removing some irrelevant artificial lakes due to its poor design, which cause mixing between males and females.
- The need to indicate safe swimming areas with indication of its various depth of sea water.
- Minimising the tremendous amount of sculptures to be limited only to some specific sites to give identity and meaning of the place or space.

The following valuable comments from a highly educated lady who held a post graduate certificate, represents how women in Saudi Arabia perceived the outdoor recreational areas of Jeddah's Corniche, she said:

*(19) “The Corniche areas is marvellous and to a higher level but we the women did not have recreational place, only to sit in front of the sea. . . and on very rare occasions to sit in a restaurant or to go to amusement parks, where most of the people who enjoy the Corniche are only children and adult males, where there is nothing to deter them in front of women, it is so difficult to participate in any activity for women, and moreover we couldn't even enjoy the private chalets...due to lack of privacy...We stay less than an hour because of the high and hot temperature and due to lack of suitable place for Saudi family...”*

- The Corniche's appearance is succeeded in attracting visitors' sense of beautification; but failed to accommodate their actual needs, way of life and leisure pattern.
- Women have no adequate outdoor recreational opportunities on Jeddah's Corniche, with exception of only to sit.
- The majority who enjoy Jeddah's Corniche men and Children. No place for women and handicapped.
- It is very difficult, even more, sometimes it is impossible, for women to participate in any activity. In addition, the private-rented chalets were also not suitable for women use. Again it is the problem of not solving how men and women in Saudi Arabia could enjoy - separately from each other- the existing outdoor recreational facilities and opportunities.
- The lack of privacy is the major problem to be solved immediately.
- The lack of shelters with acceptable climatic conditions against heat, sand storms and natural factors are among the needed things in Jeddah's Corniche.

Another comment from Saudi lady with master degree, she said in her questionnaire format that:

(20) *"The Corniche was in need of more secure playgrounds with electric games to suit each age group. To prevent making sculptures that are not related to local Islamic culture.*

- The need to provide more secure playground in Jeddah's Corniche
- The need to prevent anything that contradict local culture and environment
- The good idea of establishing *"an amusement city that accommodates all the various recreational activities"*

And finally, she asked all decision-makers to prevent bachelors from their unwise attitudes and behaviour, and their actions of driving luxurious cars to attract attentions.

Another female with a Master degree. She said that:

(21) *"There were no factors to attract me to spend my leisure time on the Corniche, just to sit idly and watch. I can sit in my own home where no one interferes with my privacy and be free from annoying bachelors*

*"One of the main initiative factor that attract them to visit the Corniche was to have more knowledge about 'what's going on' in the city structures and urban fabrics. (new developments)*

*"To improve a faraway recreational areas from traffic and pedestrian circulation and to provide more recreational areas for children. And to regulate the movement and actions of sales-men which have been caused allot of problems and anxiety".*

*-To find places that maintain privacy for families. To indicate special times for ladies and children only. For example, special parks for families (women and children under 12 years old) on Sunday, Tuesday and Thursday only. The remaining days are for men and boys only. Saturday for maintenance of the outdoor areas.*

*- To establish a religious authority to prevent evil things, and to command justice in polite kindness manner. "Make the whole Corniche a pedestrians zone with wide sitting areas.*

- Prevent bachelors' unwise attitudes and behaviour and actions of driving their cars to attract attentions of ladies.
- Provide more outdoor recreational opportunities to prevent monotony and boredom for women.
- Make adequate distance between the sea-line and traffic and pedestrian flow.
- the need to prevent or regulate the movement and actions of sales-men which have cause many problems, privacy intrusion and anxiety.
- Time and place zoning.
- The good idea of pedestrianizing some zones of Jeddah's Corniche with wide sitting and recreational areas.

Another aware and highly educated respondent gave this message to all who are concerned to enhance, improve and solve some of the existing outdoor recreational areas in Saudi Arabia. He said:



(23) *"In order to be able to enhance or develop the Corniche area, we must, first of all, find the design elements according to the priorities of religion, then by free-evil recreational pursuits. (any outdoor recreational facility that contradict Islamic law and teaching may be considered as an evil thing) Some times the place was first selected due to the lack of the alternatives.*

*Adding to that, if we want to improve and enhance outdoor recreational areas, we must relate them to other important things, we can not concentrate on one field and forget, or overlook other fields. Because the existence of a nation or an individual Muslim; knowing well his religion, and watch or be afraid of the Almighty only God (those comments applied to both male and females). you will not find much difficulty to planning and designing such establishments, or in preserving them, even if there are some shortenings to find completion, or in find supporting services for the recreational provision.*

*For example, in relation to the families, you will find the women, by themselves, preserve and maintain their privacy, where nothing will appear from her that will attract others eyes. Even, if some thing appear from her, the one who fears Allah will lower his eyes. Then that, also will apply to bachelors. Again we return to say again that we must educate and take care of Muslim individuals and the nation about Islam, and to perform its ritual, duties, and teaching in every aspect of our life, in every place to get the feeling that the Almighty God is watching us in every second of our life and places. Finally, I pray to Allah to guide and help you and others, like you to put design and provision that suit our religious, traditions and culture, and to stop imitating and running blindly behind the others ideas. "*

Then he provides the idea of making enclosures as mounded fingers recreational patterns, with special arrangements to preserve each others privacy. Then he recommended that aesthetic sculpture must be allocated to serve certain purposes, not only asthmatic, but functionally as, for example, to be used as barriers between sitting areas.

- The need to establish a landscape architectural concepts , principles and techniques to suit Saudi Arabian cultural and Islamic law and teaching.
- The need to integrate all other urban, economical, cultural, industrial and educational institutions to be framed by Islamic law and teaching, because Islam is a way of life, not part of life, i.e. from Islamic point of view every thing in this life must be under the full control of Islam (the law and teaching of the Almighty Allah).
- It is not enough only to have a successful project only without educate and teach people to comprehensively understand their Islamic teaching and why they were created in this earth. The more the one knows his religion and Islamic duties the more he well be aware to fair Allah and watch his or her action to be as Allah and his prophet (peace be upon him) ordered.
- The need to establish enclosures as mounded fingers recreational patterns, with adequate arrangements to preserve each others privacy.
- The need to allocate sculptures to serve certain purposes, for example, as barriers between sitting areas.

The previous comments represent the general respondents' concerns, demands and suggestions to improve Jeddah's Corniche. They are very important and need to be considered and responded to accordingly. This is because peoples' satisfaction depends

on meeting their demands and following their comments and suggestions. They are as follows.

- The light intensity must not cause privacy intrusions.
- The lack of screens between sitting and recreational sites cause privacy intrusion.
- The lack of suitable places and spaces for each individual cause some people to not visit the outdoor recreational site.
- It is very important, from Islamic point of view, to provide the necessary praying areas with its services and ablution areas to allow people to pray in due time.
- It is very important to provide ample outdoor recreational areas to prevent overuse and crowding problems.
- It is a very big mistake to allocate traffic and pedestrian movements to interfere with visitors' recreational sites. An adequate distance between traffic circulation must be maintained at all Jeddah's Corniche.
- It is very important to provide three-dimensional structures to maintain privacy of users.
- The needs to provide separated outdoor recreational areas to be used according to gender and the age of users and his physical conditions.
- The need to re-design or remove some artificial poorly designed lakes which contradicts local culture.
- Some amusement parks must be re-developed to match the right combination of locality.
- The Corniche must be re-designed, enhanced or to be adapted by an adequate landscape design approach to suit the conservative people. (The design must facilitates Muslim way of life).
- The need to prevent male-bachelors from being within the domains of families.
- The need to increase the maintenance of the Corniche to be more clean and pleasant smells.
- The need to provide more and more attractive and up-to-date outdoor recreational facilities and opportunities.
- The need to distribute all outdoor recreational facilities all along the Corniche to reduce the over-use and to prevent under-use areas. Evenly distribution of facilities may reduces the pressure of demand on some areas to be released on other areas.
- The need to enhance the existing sea-defence system where it is now a good habitat for rats and insects. Above all, it is very poorly constructed where it may be very danger for users, especially children (problem of sinking).
- The problem of bad smell of car exhausts must be avoided.
- The need to provide more adequate recreational centres for elderly and retired.
- The need to establish a religious consultants within the environmental designers groups to make sure every outdoor recreational projects must not be approved until it follow comprehensively the Islamic law and teaching (Shari'a). It is the only way that future projects will not re-produces the same physical or social problems.

In short, almost all the previous respondents' comments, suggestions, criticism and their requirements to be provided in Jeddah's Corniche are concentrated in preventing male-bachelors from being in families outdoor recreational sites. Privacy is the main issue to be maintained in all outdoor recreational sites, particularly the privacy of women.

Management, maintenance and emergency first aids as well as public services (telephone, electricity, praying areas, toilets and drinking fountains) to be provided adequately and sufficiently all over Jeddah's Corniche.

### Analysing respondents' comments

Quotation No.	respondents' Requirements
1	Lighting . Privacy problems screens
2	Specially designed places Praying areas Public services. Problem of crowding
3	Public services
4	Screens Specially designed places Privacy problems Ample open spaces Danger of adjacent to traffic flow First Aid facilities
6	Shelters Dunes (Three-dimensional structures) Privacy problems
7	Mix of females with females (for social encouragement) Crowding problems
8	Public services. Problems of imported ideas of amusements parks Planting (shade and screens) Restricted buildings in the Corniche
9	Prevent bachelors (privacy and mixing problems). Social tensions
10	Cleaning. Prevent bachelors (privacy and mixing problems)
11	Time/place zoning. Prevent bachelors (privacy and mixing problems)
12	Shelters Screenings
13	Mosques (praying areas) for women only Amusement parks for women only
14	Areas for women only South Corniche for male-bachelors & North Corniche for families
15	The implementation of Islamic law & teaching to enhance the Corniche Religious consultants
16	Attractiveness . Privacy problems
17	Recreational areas for each member of the family at one time decentralise recreational opportunities Problems of lack of shades

18	Swimming areas
	Cleaning
	Attractiveness. Bachelors and privacy problems
	Hot climate (shading and hot climate problems)
	Time-zoning
	Places for women only
	Remove the existing rocks of the existing sea-defence system
	Insects and rats problems. Problem of bachelors and privacy for women
	Clubs for women
	Recreational facilities for women use
19	Pollution
	Bad smell . crowding problems and bachelors problems
20	Recreational centres for elder and retirees
	Lack of places with adequate privacy
21	Recreational facilities for women use
	Bad design of the existing private chalets, privacy problems
22	Secure playgrounds
	Prevent of sculptures which have no meaning or function. Bachelors and privacy problems
	Amusement city
23	Bachelors and privacy problems
	Danger of proximity to traffic flow Privacy problems
	Regulate sales-men movements anxiety and privacy problems
	Time-zoning
	Religious consultants
	pedestrianized zones with Jeddah's Corniche
	Wide sitting areas
24	Designing within the frame of Islam
	Integration system among all governmental, private institutions under Islamic consultants. (Every project must be revised by religious committee to be approved)
	Islamic education for all
	Three-dimensional structures privacy and bachelors problems

The above questionnaire result and analysis might be helpful in providing special information about the Corniche users and their nationalities and whether the above data can represent the community as a whole. The demographic variables show whether the community is homogeneous or not, so that the environmental designer can determine the type of programs, activities, facilities and pattern to be provided for the users. For example, the demographic information might explore the number of persons per car and size of group to define the recreation activity areas needed for the visitors and to know the number of toilets and the other related facilities. In addition to that the information gives the number of vehicles used to visit the site to define the parking areas and roads needed.

In order to understand the outdoor recreational and leisure pattern in Saudi Arabia, a total picture of the overall result of this questionnaire was explored within the context of the local society and its culture and traditions.

## **SUMMARY AND DISCUSSION OF THE RESULTS**

This chapter has explored the result of the questionnaire from Jeddah's Corniche. The data analysis demonstrated that the average age of the respondents is low. The lack of adequate outdoor recreational opportunities encourage people to spend most of their leisure time within the domain of their houses, for example to watch television (98% of them have a television set). One of the main reasons that people were not enjoying the outings was related to the lack of an adequate degree of privacy within the outdoor recreational sites. 66% of the respondents ranked the level of privacy for families as bad. In addition, the main reason that people visit some outdoor recreational areas in spite of the social or landscape physical problems is the lack of the other alternatives. The Corniche has its characteristics great is better than many of the nearby gardens or neighbourhood open spaces, which are very poorly designed, being small and lacking proper maintenance and management. 91% of the sample indicated that they visit the Corniche because of sea and natural views or as a chance for the women and children to sit on the Corniche side-walk pavements which also causes pedestrian and traffic movements to decrease people's satisfaction and intrude on their private domains.

The data analysis also reveals that 87% of the sample were not able to pursue active outdoor recreational activities because of religious reasons, lack of adequate opportunities and facilities and the exposure of outdoor areas which again causes privacy intrusion. The bothering of families by bachelors was considered a severe factor that affects women's movements in outdoor areas. 88% of the women suffer from being bothered by single men. The mixing and interference of bachelors with families creates social tension, and sometimes forces visitors to leave the site as soon as bachelors accumulate. The narrow and inconvenient areas allocated for outdoor recreational pursuits also increase the suffering and discomfort of visitors. 72% of respondents

were not comfortable with the arrangement and location of recreational sites or their design. The lack of privacy and shade, insufficient opportunities and services influence 70% of respondents to demand more open spaces or new gardens designed especially for families. There is a need to have adequate outdoor recreational areas to suit Saudi families, with more protection and adequate space partitioning. The respondents demanded that the authority prevent bachelor men from driving within recreational spaces. Over 56% of them asked for complete privacy for families, especially for ladies within the public domains. In short, the whole questionnaire was based on exploring the existing social and physical problems that were inherited in the existing pattern of Jeddah's Corniche. The problem of privacy, safety, shaded areas, bachelors interferences, crowding and the small size of outdoor recreation sites all contributed to influence people's satisfaction. The things that will encourage and satisfy users' satisfaction is to meet the need for developing, enhancing and modifying existing and future landscape design of outdoor recreational areas to fit the right social and physical combination in the right matrix of the local environment within the frame of Islamic teaching and law (*Shari'a*).

The next chapter will give a conclusion, recommendations on what to think of when making outdoor recreational open spaces in Saudi Arabia.

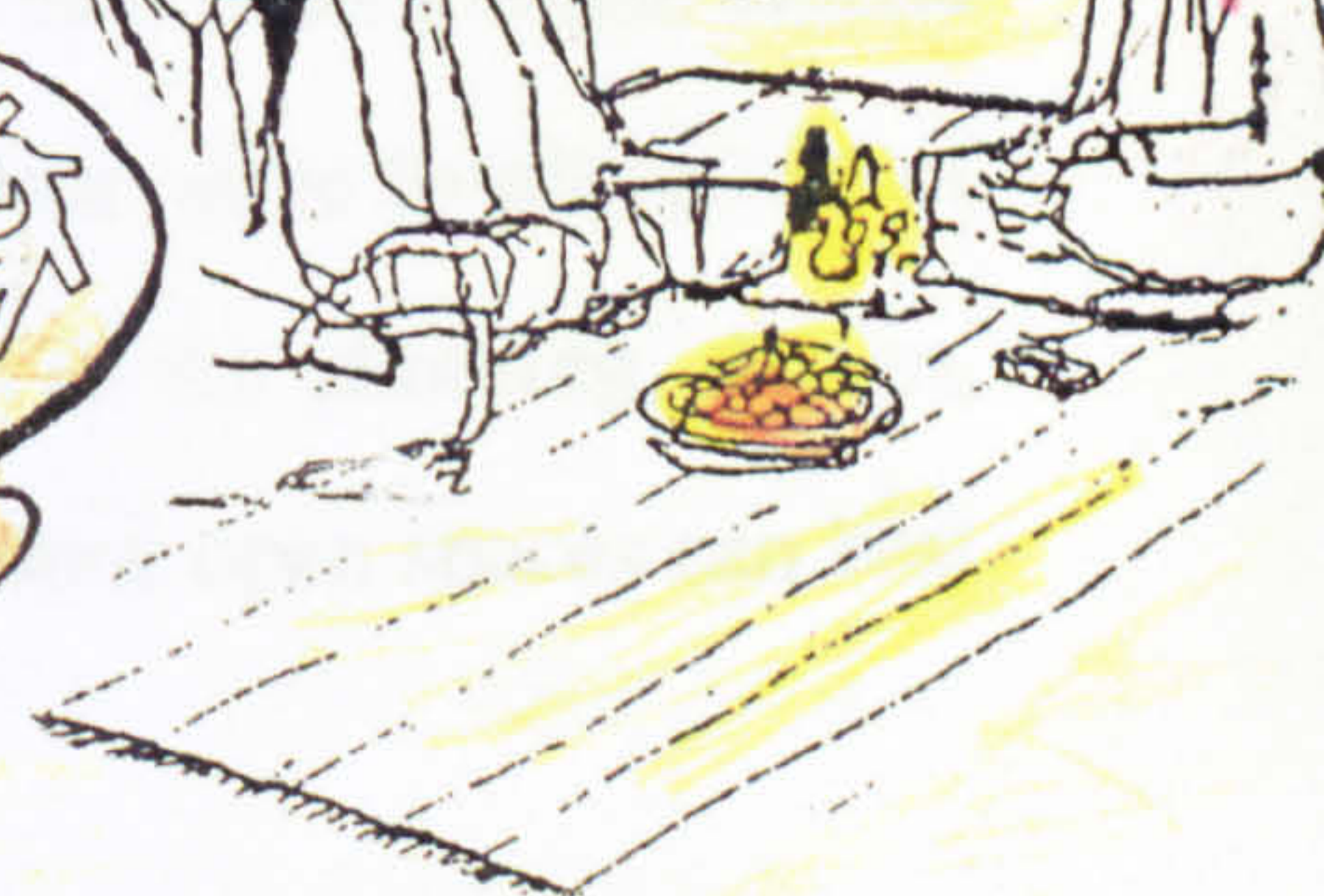
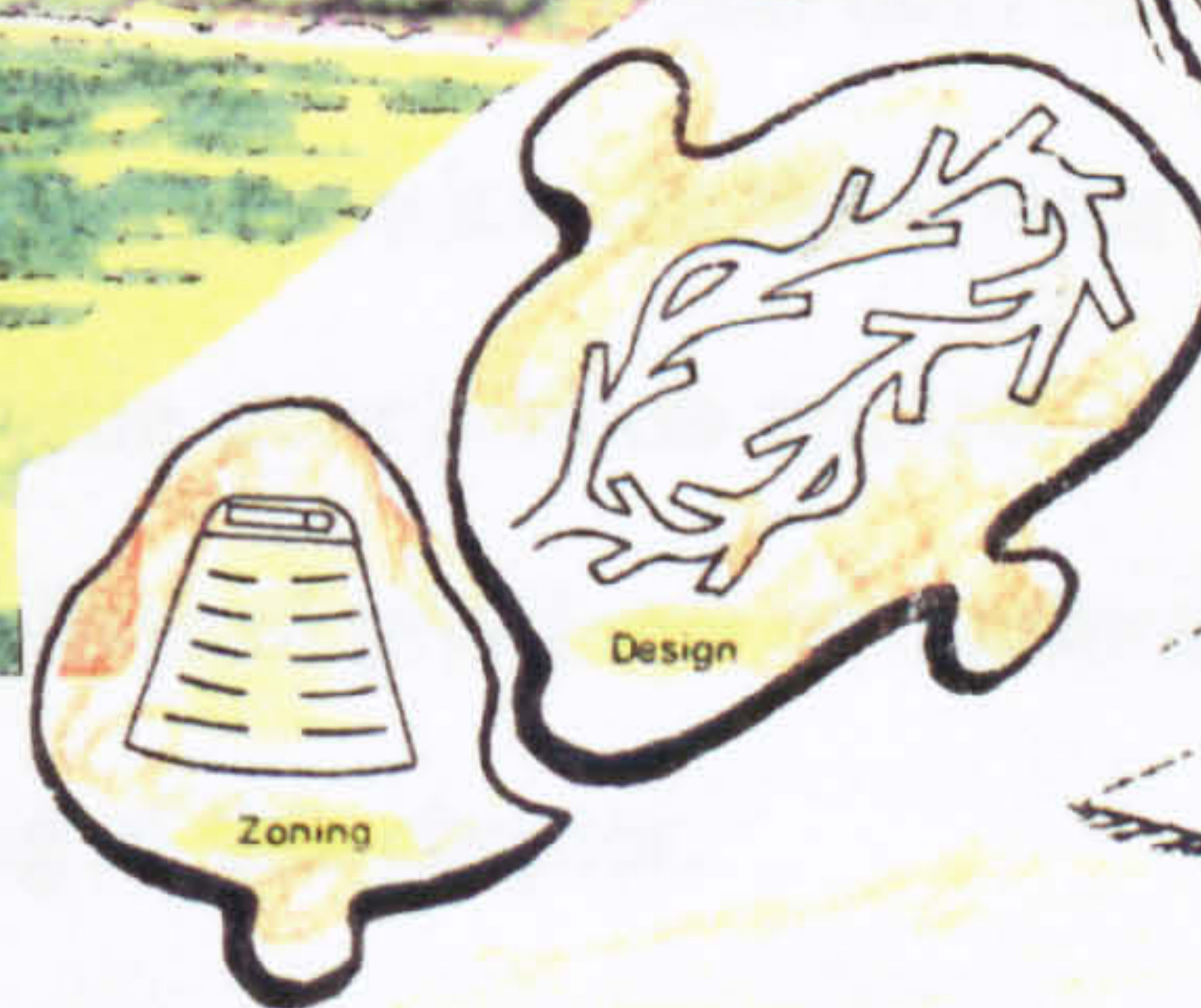
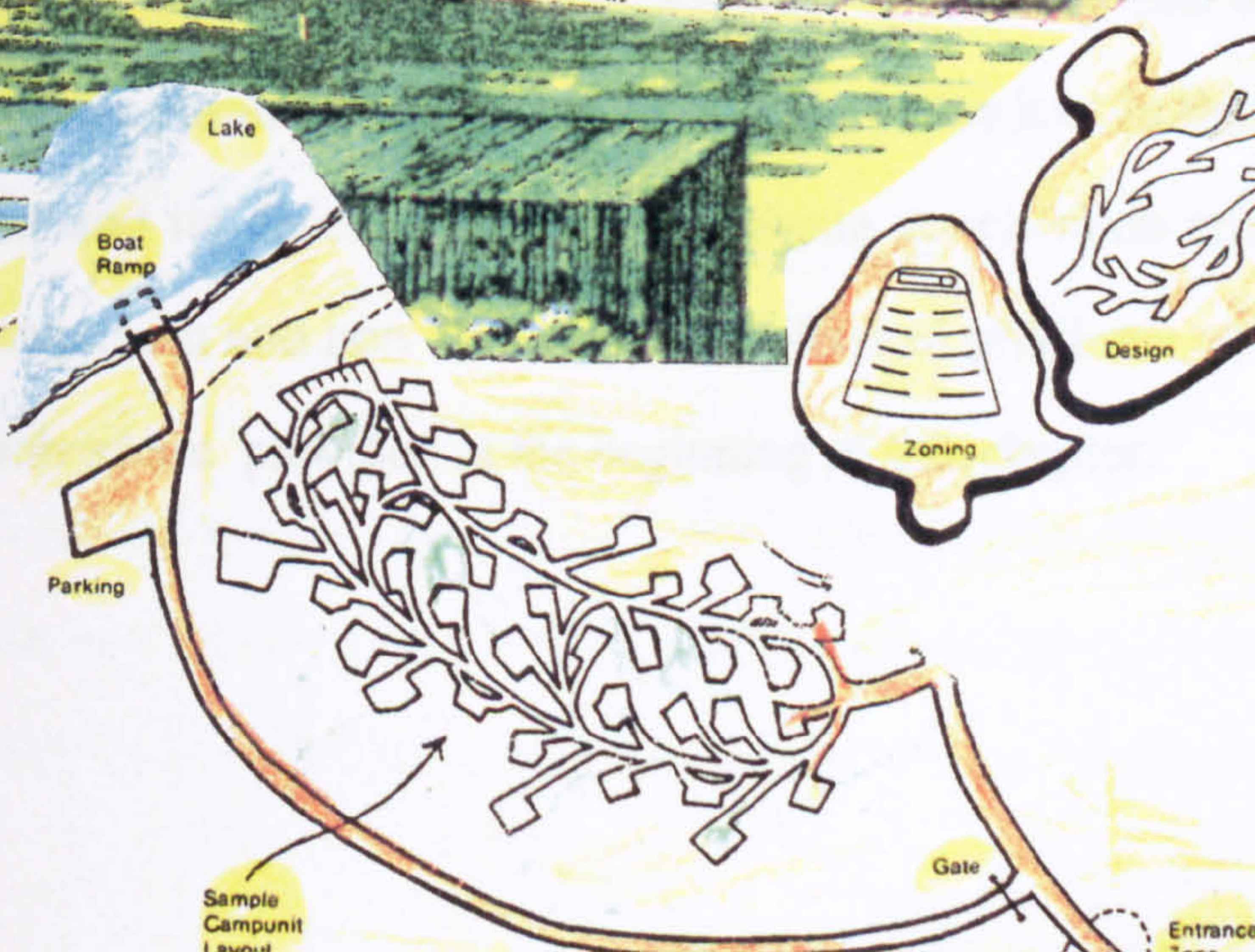
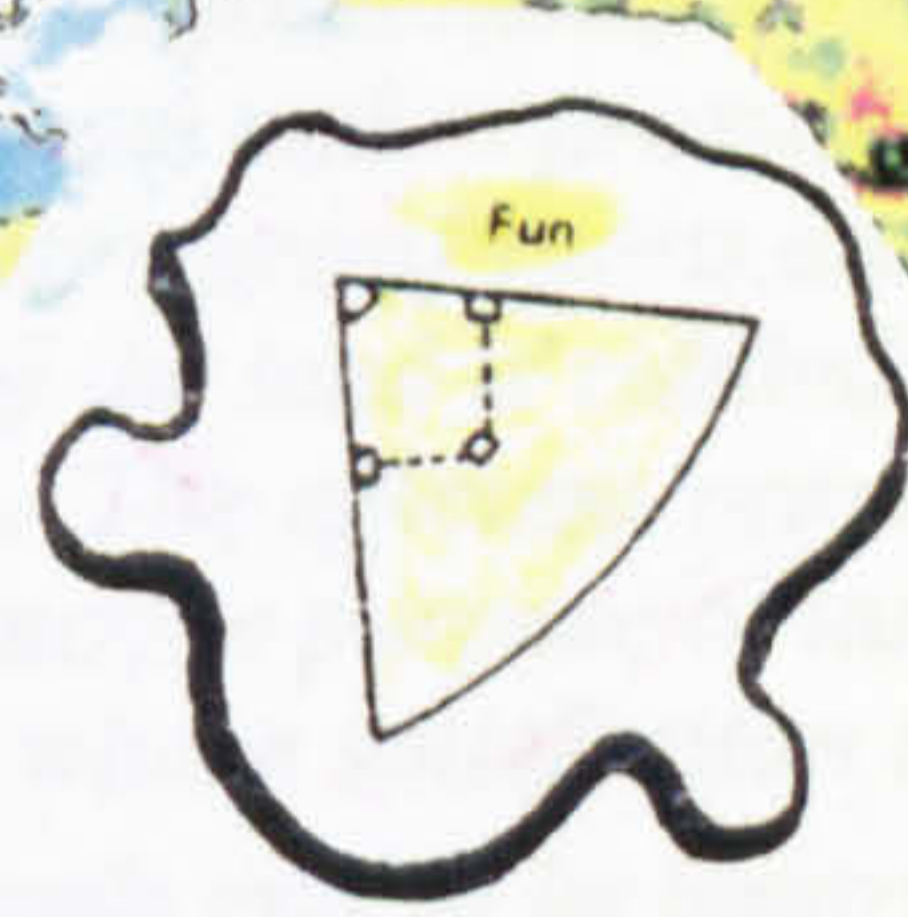
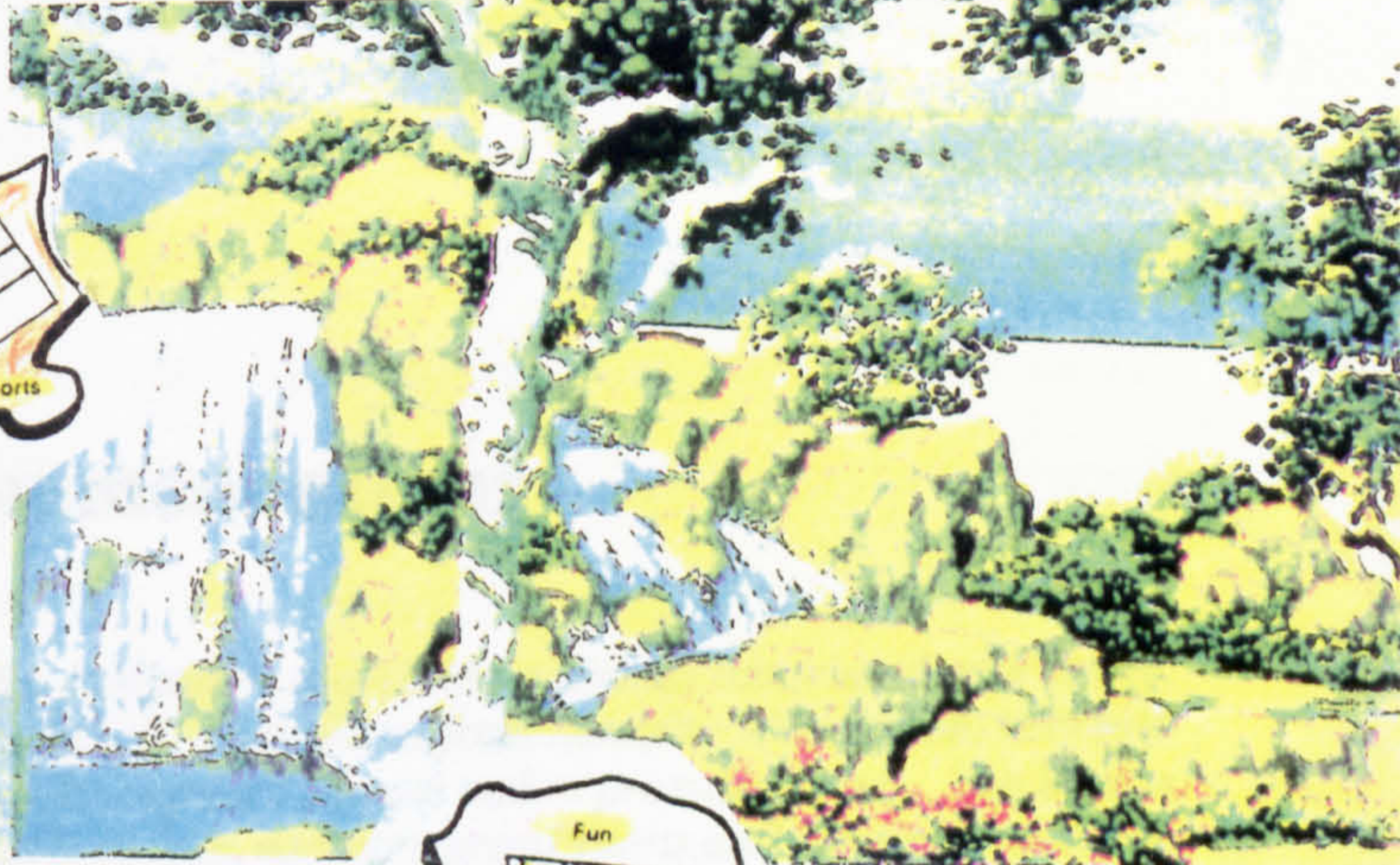
## Notes And References

---

- 1 Comments from a highly educated Saudi lady who held a post graduate certificate.  
  
Comments from another highly educated Saudi lady who held a post graduate certificate
- 2
- 3 Haycock, K. et al (1992) StatView (USA: Abacus Concepts, Inc.)
- 4 Siegel, S. (1956) Nonparametric Statistics for the Behavioural Science (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company), p. 175
- 5 Ott, L. et al ,(1987) Statistics: A Tool for the Social Science, (North Situate, MA Duxbury Press. (As cited in: Lee, K. (1990), Cross-Sociocultural Comparison of Aesthetic Attitudes to Gardenscape with special Reference to Chatsworth, England and Piwon, Korea, unpublished Ph.D. thesis, University of Sheffield. p.92
- 6 de Vaus, D.A. (1986) Survey in Social Research - (Contemporary Social research Series II) (London: George Allen & Unwin (Publisher) Ltd.), p. 99

# CHAPTER 11

## Conclusions And Recommendations





# 11

## Conclusions And Recommendations

*"As birds create nests so people make places for habitation and all the activities associated with living. Vegetation and structures are arranged to shelter much - used places from excessive wind or sun, to create localised micro climates more comfortable than the regional climate and to provide privacy. The land is shaped according to the needs of a multiplicity of land uses, various types of sports and recreation, outdoor storage, meeting places, places to sit and to stand. The surface of the land is riddled with communication routes, footpaths, pavements, roads, canals, railways and pipes. The efficient provision of facilities for this multiplicity of functions is sometimes put forward as the principle purpose of landscape design. The result is measurable in terms of identifiable responses of users whose satisfaction is sought...Down-to-earth understanding of the existing landscape and how it works needs ever to be improved." <sup>1</sup>*

**T**HIS CHAPTER explores conclusions and recommendations obtained from this research. It will also include a discussion of the approach to solving the problems of the outdoor recreational and leisure open spaces. As outlined in the first chapter, the main concerns of this study are the problems of privacy, and how to meet the public demands and desires for adequate recreation patterns, and their role in shaping urban outdoor recreational spaces with appropriate facilities, opportunities and management. The research also includes a study of some of the major outdoor recreational areas from the main Saudi Arabian cities. Then Jeddah's Corniche's most attractive sea-side public outdoor recreational area has been surveyed to determine present use and attitudes and its visitors' satisfaction and demands, which might dictate the future planning and design of outdoor provisions in the conservative Saudi culture of Islam and its desert environment. Some conclusions related to the planning, design, management and how the social and physical problems of outdoor open spaces can best be solved are provided at the beginning of this chapter.

## CONCLUSIONS

**A**LTHOUGH PARKS, GARDENS, RECREATION GROUNDS AND CHILDREN'S PLAYGROUNDS have been components of the urban environment, and although planners have had the legislative ability to plan such elements on a comprehensive-basis since the rapid growth boom in the 1970s, standards, guidelines and the landscape architecture profession have been extremely slow to develop. Outdoor recreational provisions have been planned and designed without consultation with landscape architectural knowledge. In fact the three main elementary questions of what type of space, how much space and where it should be located were not effectively considered in many outdoor recreational spaces in Saudi Arabian cities.

The increasing demand for outdoor recreational areas, and the large proportion of people visiting outdoor areas are significant components of the total leisure pattern. For example, the survey in Jeddah's Corniche, Saudi Arabia, did highlight various factors that are particularly important in shaping the outdoor recreational urban open spaces within the context of Saudi vernacular culture and tradition. The findings indicated that there are particular groups in the population who are relatively deprived of opportunities to participate in outdoor recreational and leisure pursuits, for various reasons such as inadequate design, the lack of the desired level of privacy, the bother caused by male-bachelors, and their interference with the private domains of families. It is essential to consider the type of space that is required to satisfy users' needs and culture.

The majority of visitors are primarily concerned about the privacy and safety of their families. In fact the findings of this research can also be used to make suggestions about the type of outdoor recreational space that is required. This is because the majority of outdoor open spaces encourage visitors to participate in passive rather than active pursuits, where it seems that outdoor recreation and parks are only attractive for walking, sitting and other passive pursuits. That is to say the outdoor recreational areas must be well designed and laid out to accommodate both passive and active pursuits for both males and females with a comprehensive consideration to preserve privacy and safety factors in every stage of landscape design in the Saudi environment. Therefore women

could have more opportunities to participate in trouble-free outdoor recreational pursuits. It seems that the majority of women would like to take up recreational activities in future without the intervening of bachelors or their privacy being intruded upon.

It is worth mentioning that, in general, people pursue more passive than active recreational and leisure pursuits. This is due to various social and physical factors such as the nature of the Saudi desert's hot and arid climatic conditions which influence people to stay at home most of their leisure time.<sup>2</sup> The other factor that influences people to participate in passive rather than active pursuits is the lack of adequate outdoor recreational opportunities and facilities to suit each member of the society in Saudi Arabia.

In Saudi Arabian society there are profound differences between the two sexes in their time uses and leisure patterns, which are attributed to religious and traditional social norms. For example, women must not drive and they must accompany a male relative during shopping, travelling and in outdoor recreational sites. In fact, women are not allowed to leave their homes unless there is some urgent necessity such as going to work and then only if no male (husband, brother or any relative) can take care of her livelihood. In Saudi Arabia, women must adhere to their homes to raise children and to take care of her household. This is not meant however to prevent women from enjoying the outings. It is preferable to encourage them to spend more of their leisure time on outdoor rather than indoor activities for health and psychological matters. That is why it is very important to provide adequate outdoor recreational areas for the use of women, but within their Islamic law and teaching (*Shari'a*).

Gender has a significance on leisure, males tending to have less leisure during the weekdays and more at weekends and at holiday times. Conversely, a high proportion of women had more than six leisure hours on weekdays and a comparable proportion had less leisure at weekends. This reflects the increase in responsibilities resulting from the presence of males in the house at weekends. Also the male's daily time is usually controlled by his job while a female's planned schedule is governed by household activities which are as fatiguing at the weekend as during the week.

The differences in the employment contribution of each sex is reflected in the fact that more females, particularly older ladies, have leisure time in the mornings. A

tendency also emerged for females to have their normal leisure period at the end of the day, and for men to take it at night. That is because at the end of the day there are fewer tasks demanding attention in the home, therefore females feel less obliged to do housework, while for males this period is an essential one. It is a continuation of the morning working period, after the mid-day rest. It is a particularly busy period for the self-employed, for private sector employees and for those working overtime.

From the researcher's point of view, the availability of recreational facilities, as well as the degree of privacy, may have an effect on participation. Where facilities and adequate design are available, people have higher rates of participation than in areas with limited facilities and which are exposed to other's eyes. It is also obvious that outdoor recreational open spaces with a higher number of facilities have larger catchment areas than open spaces with limited facilities.

With regard to satisfaction with the design of outdoor recreational provision, there are nine elements in the outdoor recreational open space design that the research took into consideration (second part of the questionnaire, question number 2). Each had varying effects on visitors' satisfaction with the overall design of outdoor recreational and leisure pattern. The survey showed that 49% of the sample indicated that the general conditions of the recreational areas next to their homes were good. The data also showed that all respondents were satisfied, in general, about all landscape elements with exception of the privacy for women.

Although the data indicated that the general conditions of various outdoor open spaces were good, they were not adequately designed to satisfy its visitors. Beside these observations the researcher's experience with local culture and environment has shown that a large outdoor open space provides a more pleasant leisure environment than the near-by open spaces. The high number of trees, the three dimensional screens and hierarchies and space articulation will contribute to increase visitors' satisfaction. People prefer that their families can enjoy the outdoor activities without intervention in their personal space or territorial areas. Privacy and safety, for example, are at the top of the most required elements to be provided in any outdoor recreational social space or place. The large outdoor open spaces provide a more pleasant environment because users can

allocate themselves at a reasonable distance which preserves their privacy, i.e., beyond the bare-eyed visual contact area. This may allow women to participate in recreational pursuits without mixing with males. This is because Saudi Arabia is a sexually segregated society. It does not tolerate mixing between men and women except in the most private familial and marital circumstances. "Segregation was adopted as a way to maintain personal privacy and is therefore still observed and jealously guarded."<sup>3</sup> The problems in some nearby open spaces and gardens tend to deter people from using them.

There is a relationship between visitors' satisfaction and the planning and design patterns of outdoor recreational site. Quality, physical setting, the design of facilities, program and the management as assured by the landscape architecture all have an effect on users' satisfaction. (That is people's dissatisfaction might be related to the lack of an adequate landscape design provision). The physical setting and spatial pattern as well as culture, tradition and Islamic principles influence the participation, behaviour and attitudes in outdoor areas

It seems, from previous analysis of the questionnaire results (chapter 10), the overall pattern of the layout, physical structure and spatial arrangements of outdoor recreational provisions are not adequately designed to reflect both the nature of local people or their vernacular environment. In addition, many of the existing facilities and programmes were not designed with particular clientele or their culture. Moreover, the privacy of users was not comprehensively considered to protect the family from intruders. The lack of volumetric vertical structures were the main elements that need thoughtful landscape architectural techniques in order to be solved. The lack of implementation of adequate facilities or programmes to satisfy Saudi families, which relates to the designers' failure to produce a type of outdoor recreational provision which is consistent with the physical and cultural aspects of the country of Saudi Arabia. Problem of privacy intrusion is the crux of this research, because privacy is the most important aspect to be preserved for each individual of the society.

The effects of the great demand for outdoor recreational areas influenced the authority to rush in supplying outdoor areas without comprehensive consideration of users' demands, culture and religious principles, which resulted in a lack of privacy for

ladies, and the restrictions imposed on them limiting their opportunities to participate in active outdoor pursuits. The increase of leisure time also caused an increase in demand for more and more outdoor recreational areas. The increase of income, mobility and the availability of more leisure time all have a significant role in influencing participation in outdoor recreation activities. In short disposable income, mobility and the increase of leisure time are very significant variables in increasing the demand for more opportunities as well as in influencing recreational behaviour.

Leisure pattern of Saudi society has dramatically changed from simple outings to the desert or sea beaches or farms to more complex modern recreational patterns, for example, modern outdoor planned areas, with new children's play equipment, boating, camping or driving for pleasure. The inadequacy of planning or design of outdoor recreational areas causes people to spend less time, or sometimes stop some visitors altogether, especially women, from participation in outdoor activities. In fact this research showed that women pursue fewer outdoor recreational activities than men, and their participation levels in the active pursuits are significantly lower. While physiological differences may be of some importance in relation to some activities, undoubtedly social and cultural factors are of overwhelming importance in Saudi Arabia. In fact gender is an important determinant of recreation demand, because women like a greater degree of privacy, in order to have more opportunities to participate in recreation.

The participation in outdoor activities varied between sitting, chatting, playing cards or watching television, with some active pursuits mainly by men and children. In general visitors using outdoor recreational opportunities in Saudi Arabia pursue more time in passive pursuits than active. This is due to two factors. Firstly active pursuits are predominantly engaged in by younger male age groups (bachelors) or children, and secondly, the existing outdoor provision of facilities for active pursuits is poor compared with the opportunities for participation in passive pursuits. Adding to that the lack of three-dimensional structures of adequate size and layout have also had a profound effect on women's' leisure patterns and time. In short the demand for outdoor recreation has increased with the increase of income, mobility and the availability of leisure time as well as with the availability of easy access to recreational facilities, because where facilities are

available people have higher rates of participation than in areas with limited facilities or poor design, i.e. open spaces with a higher number of facilities and adequate design have larger catchment areas than open spaces with limited facilities and inadequate landscape design.

Although there is a critical shortage of public open spaces there are also some landscape architectural mistakes in designing or planning the existing outdoor recreational areas. Many outdoor recreational areas around different parts of the Kingdom were planned and designed, to a large extent, with the same concepts and in the same manner. For example, in chapter 5, there are several examples of the main types of recreational resources in Saudi Arabia where they were similar to each other, regardless of the location or the environment of that location. From examination of these various sites the layout, opportunities, facilities and the physical structures were, in substantial degree, similar. For example Jeddah's Corniche beach layout was similar to Dammam's Corniche. This similarity and the '*adherence to the same concepts*' were causing the same problems to be repeated. The point is each site has its own characteristics and environment which means that it must be designed and planned according to its natural features. When a certain outdoor provision is implemented and opened to the public, there must be an updated evaluation of the site to explore its social or physical problems so those identified problems can be avoided in the future provisions.

It is worth mentioning that many of those outdoor projects were planned and designed without conducting any comprehensive social or physical inquiry to enable design according local people's requirements, rather these projects were developed to municipality standards which give priority to public traffic and housing projects, leaving open spaces to be decorated by landscape elements.

The lack of adequate social surveys has resulted in providing outdoor recreational areas in different parts of the cities, which causes some of them to be over-used and some to be vacant land or under-used. Even more the organisation and management were also poorly achieved which resulted in people's dissatisfaction and complaints.

Recreation problems and issues were identified so that it would be possible to know why some visitors were not satisfied and what their particular requirements are.

This is because one of the functions for the environmental designer is to know how well the provision meets people's demands in terms of the quantity and quality of provision. That is to say the ultimate test for the success of outdoor recreational site development is the level of satisfaction that it engenders for its users. The research concluded that some neighbourhood or nearby open spaces were not used and were abandoned by neighbours. This phenomenon took the attention of the researcher to identify the reasons for visitors' dissatisfaction. It has been found that the lack of detailed knowledge about users' needs and their leisure pattern, as well as the failure to predict user behaviour and attitudes were mainly to blame for the unsatisfactory outdoor recreational environment. For example the overall outdoor recreational provision for some areas did not sufficiently provide adequate opportunities or facilities to suit each type of activity. Women for example, as has been mentioned before throughout the text, do not have an equal share with men. The size of the layout and lack of proper landscape design with adequate outdoor facilities limits the chance of women to enjoy the outings.

The problem of not siting facilities in the right location and layout to the right users demand has caused some conflicts. For example, sites may not be provided where they are wanted. The Corniche as an example was designed to beautify the sea front as well as providing for outdoor recreation. But its planning and design were based on the *traffic and beautifying system approach*, rather than on the *outdoor recreational approach*, which resulted in many social and physical problems, particularly the problems of privacy, safety and opportunities for both gender's leisure patterns. As mentioned before, the lack of well qualified landscape architects and the lack of comprehensive social research about the local environment leads to the distribution of provisions being guided by the notion that *what is vacant land should be planted, lit and paved* regardless of its location, character and content. This approach to outdoor recreation provision resulted in people's dissatisfaction and hindered people's leisure activities.

The site layout planning and design was not satisfactory because the basic landscape soft or hard elements were inadequately integrated to provide adequate shelter, privacy or the sense of being in *a personal or territorial* space or place. It is important that environmental designers should provide adequate opportunities for participation in



recreation compatible with local culture and Islamic principles. From the researcher's point of view and from arguments with some relatives and friends, it was clear that women would like to participate more in outdoor recreational activities provided that their privacy is not intruded upon by strangers. It is the challenge for local environmental designers to provide outdoor recreational areas that allow women to participate in active recreational pursuits without exposing themselves to others' eyes, or contradicting the social and cultural requirements of the not to harm or mutual harms principle.

In addition to the need for adequate layout and design of outdoor recreational areas, the need for a correct management approach is inevitably needed. The *time-zoning* for example, is a good approach to allowing certain parks or gardens to be used by different genders on different days or at different times. For example, some highly used gardens in Saudi Arabia have been time zoned for males and females with their children to participate in outdoor recreational areas without the intervention of bachelors. Although this approach solves the problem of privacy, it does however create the problem of separating members of one family from each other, which is not preferable in Saudi where kinship is highly linked. The husband needs to be with his wife and children to enjoy the outings together, which in turn strengthens the relationship between the spouses. In fact from an Islamic point of view, Islam encourage the spouse to play and express his feelings towards his or her spouse to enhance their relationship and increase the family-ties between themselves, so it could to break this relationship by asking the family to be temporary separated. It is worth mentioning that a family of a husband and wife with children may participate within one secluded outdoor recreational areas. In contrary, if there are more than one related families, for example sisters- or bother in law, in this case they must not mix to together. Women in one section and men in the other. In short, the designer must provide specially designed outdoor recreational sites that suit a single family (husband and wife with their children), sites suits a multi-families, another for men only and other for women use only. Of course this is a very costly landscape approach, but could be worth it to keep people within their local Islamic culture. In fact there is no alternative choice but to fear the Almighty Allah in every action to provide outdoor recreational site that be comprehensively planned and designed to

accommodate the family recreational requirements at all available leisure times. The purpose of an outdoor recreational site is to re-create, and promote the enjoyment of users, and to increase their satisfaction and encourage them to spend more of their leisure time in the outdoors

In addition, this research showed that participation in some existing outdoor sites was also causing dissatisfaction to visitors. The western-style of many implemented outdoor recreational areas created social problems of mixing or inadequate facilities which contradicted the traditional and Islamic design modes. Simplicity, ample open spaces, privacy, shade and the sense of being in enclosed areas are all existing problems, which until now have been repeated, and even now no sign has been noticed by the researcher of any solution geared to those problems. The Corniche of Jeddah is a contemporary example to explore the recreational problems and some landscape issues.

Jeddah's Corniche is the main sea-side promenade and outdoor recreational provision for the city of Jeddah's inhabitants, as well as for some visitors from near by cities such as Makkah and Taif. Those sea-side projects were concerned with the creation of opportunities for strolls and excursions by families, and to allow all Jeddah's residents to spend their leisure time walking or relaxing. The Corniche was selected to demonstrate outdoor recreational problems, and to survey and determine the present use and attitudes so as to assess the future planning and design of outdoor landscaped architectural provisions in Saudi Arabia.

The Corniche project is the name that has been given to the city of Jeddah coastal areas. It is a linear coastal park, which runs more than 80 km from the south to the north of the western part of the urban fabric which constitutes the sections of the north, centre and south Corniche. In fact it is a hard-edged traffic road with side-walk pavements, and has been provided with many sculptures (There are more than 294 sculptures on the Corniche<sup>4</sup>) and scattered parking, with some play equipment.

The Corniche is mainly very gently sloped land with some native plants. But there are no rocks, mounds or any natural vertical landscape elements which makes it very difficult for designers seeking to create private space. That was one of the reasons that influenced designers to establish 'too many sculptures', lamp posts and more

fragmented hard landscape elements. Even more the availability of plain open spaces encouraged, unfortunately, designers to fill any vacant land with any geometrical patterns which were not integrated or based with adequate consideration to the functional and hierarchical use of space articulation, which resulted in producing obscure overlapped shapes that were based on no ecological, biological or landscape architectural concepts. These mistakes are repeated all over the Corniche resulting in many social and physical problems due to the lack of the basic users' needs. This gives the researcher more clues to demonstrate the research questions and to determine present outdoor recreational use, users' attitude and their demands. Why some of them did not participate in its available opportunities; why some families prefer to visit remote outdoor areas; why some refrain from using it at certain times; and why some women prefer to spend their leisure time indoors rather than the healthy and the more enjoyable outdoors pursuits?

Harassment by male-bachelors, the lack of interpretation of Islamic principles, and over use all together form more than 70% of the main reasons that cause social conflicts and psychological problems in Jeddah's Corniche. It is crucial to improve the existing recreational function of Jeddah's Corniche and park services all over the Kingdom, with more emphasise on the women of Saudi Arabia who are deprived from full utilisation of outdoor leisure activities.

It is very important to integrate the physical design characteristics including size; how much of the space is outdoor, type of location, and the amount and organisation of natural amenities such as trees, shrubs, water, type of outdoor recreational facilities, location of opportunities, mounds and amount of built features including seating, tables, play equipment, services and amenities that support and encourage particular types of activities such as eating, sitting, reading, writing, playing and amount of physical and visual access into, out of and within the space.

The researcher found that the common request by most of the users was to prevent bachelors from driving within family areas or mixing with women. And adequate degree of privacy for women was given top priority (56%). In fact the data also showed that 68 % of the sample were asking for vertical screens as separation between men and women's recreational areas for privacy reasons.

That is to say the core issue of this research is the privacy attitude for women and how the spatial, physical and landscape elements influence their overall recreational and leisure pattern. This research has confirmed the research questions in that there is a lack of an adequate level of privacy, and that women refrain from participating in outdoor active recreational pursuits. As a result, opportunities for participation in recreation will be affected by the planning and design of the sites. The need to overcome the social and cultural obstacles - by design and by establishing gender-segregated areas at the outdoor recreational open spaces- is relatively high.

The lack of adequate management is another problem in outdoor recreational areas. It is not only the adequate amount of space or its layout that is important, but also how it is managed both in terms of the facilities provided and how they are cared for to ensure adequate use. The research showed that visitors to Jeddah's Corniche are often dissatisfied with the management and layout of existing sites. There is a need for more research into the planning aspects of urban outdoor open spaces, design and management in term of their use, development and organisation. This is because management and adequate landscape design might appear to offer the best means of extending the facilities available for use by women.

As the researcher is a landscape architect and as a result of this research survey, the following sections will explore in more detail what people actually want and how a typical layout might solve some problems related to outdoor recreational areas in Saudi Arabia.

## WHAT DO PEOPLE WANT ?

**F**ROM A LANDSCAPE ARCHITECTURAL POINT OF VIEW and from the research findings, people are interested in finding comfortable, convenient and healthier outdoor recreational areas. They are asking for preservation of their traditional way of life, to protect their families, especially ladies, from bothering by male-bachelors, to be in contact with nature, to be in more relaxed, contemplative and mediated areas, as well as having more active and passive opportunities that suit each member of their family. This means places for male children, places for female children, places for women's use only, and places for men as well as older and disabled people. Every member of the society has the right to have an equal share of adequately designed open spaces, perfect public services, a variety of opportunities, and private domains within the public sphere. Although it is impossible to satisfy each member of the family, or to provide all outdoor recreational opportunities in one single place; but by rational planning and design based on the strong, sound foundations of local culture and the basic environmental and social research, the indicator of satisfaction will be heading towards the positive rather than the negative. For example, people want privacy and safety in outdoor recreational areas. How can we meet this laudable objective? The first step is to know for whom, how and where this place is to be formulated. For instance, the place is for the outdoor recreation of a Muslim family. It should be located within easy reach and be adequately supplied with opportunities and facilities. Then, the second step is to think carefully how to organise all the different physical structures to accommodate the users' needs and culture. We know from the research that people prefer to be in areas protected from privacy intrusion, from climatic conditions and from traffic and pedestrian movement.

The third step is to know how to utilise the social, physical and economical information and to incorporate it into the design process. For example, suppose we have an open space within the urban structure. The problem is how to integrate different structures to form a unity with variety. The shelter is the main consideration, protection

and privacy are prime values. This shelter must be integrated adequately and safely with its surroundings. The whole landscape materials should be established in harmony and balance to form space articulation with proper three-dimensional volumes. There are certain concepts to be observed such as traffic noise and pedestrian circulation, the interplay of horizontal and vertical elements, the scale or the feel of being in personal and proportional human space, as well as the spatial impact of volumes and the degree of vertical enclosures for shelter, shade and privacy. The traffic and pedestrian circulation of movement must be aligned to provide a variety of views. Figures 11.1. and 11.2 illustrate the main landscape principles that must be considered in any outdoor recreation provision.

## THE LANDSCAPE ARCHITECTURAL CONCEPTS

**T**HE LANDSCAPE ARCHITECTURAL CONCEPTS of shaping open spaces, especially outdoor recreational areas can be illustrated in figures 11.1 and 11.2.

These two figures are very important due to their role in helping designers to set out their proposals. Distance is a function of area, and area is a function of space. John Simonds, in his book "Landscape Architecture"<sup>5</sup> has successfully explained how to design landscape architectural spaces or places. He explains that *site-structure plan development* must be based on *use areas* and their relationship to one another and to the total site. Then how to translate these areas into use volumes, or spaces, each volume having a shape, size, material, colour, texture, and other qualities that best express and accommodate the function for which the space is intended. Planning is two-dimensional; three-dimensional thinking takes us into the realm of design. The three-dimensional thinking is often overlooked in shaping outdoor recreational areas in Saudi Arabia.

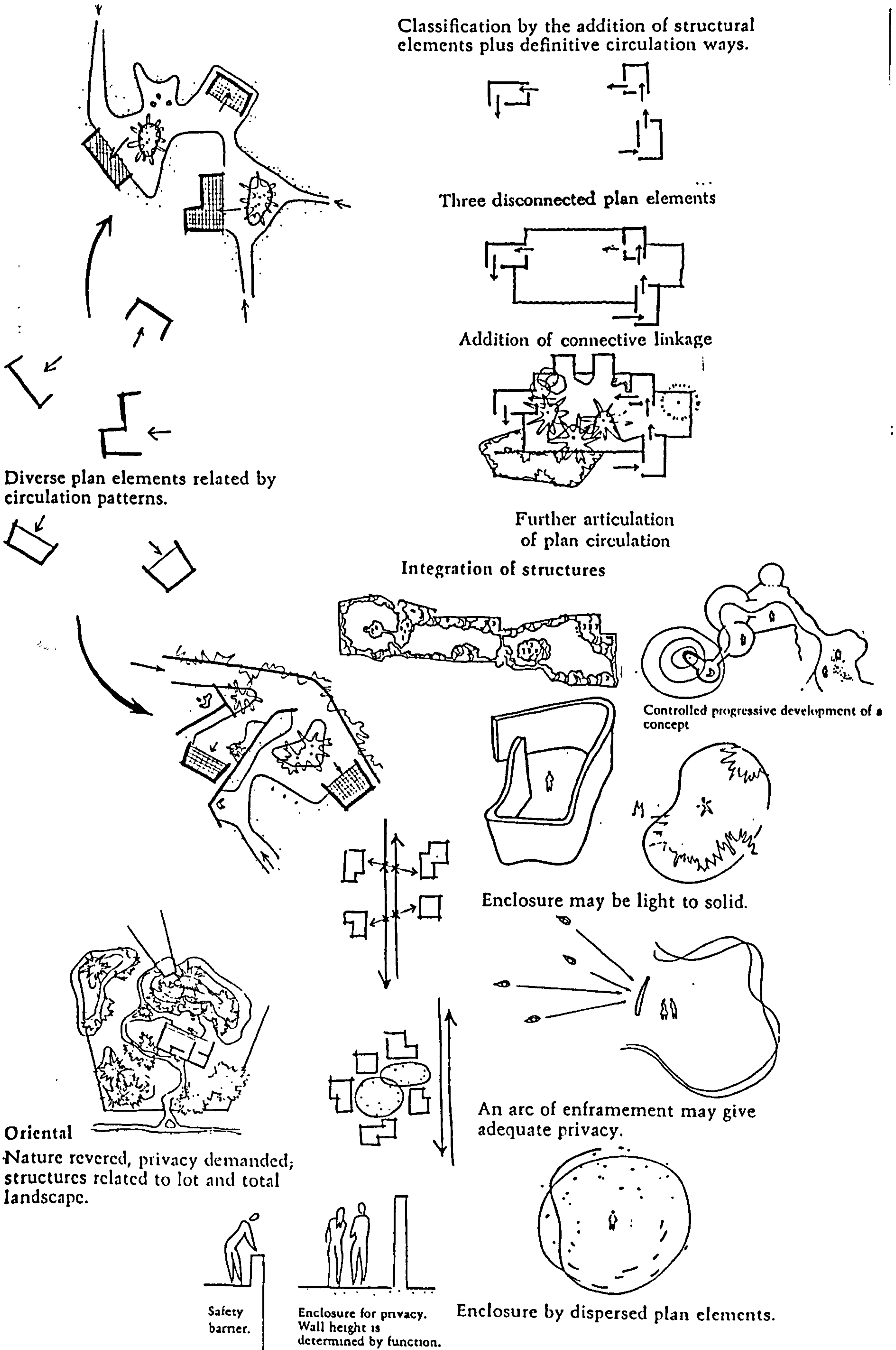
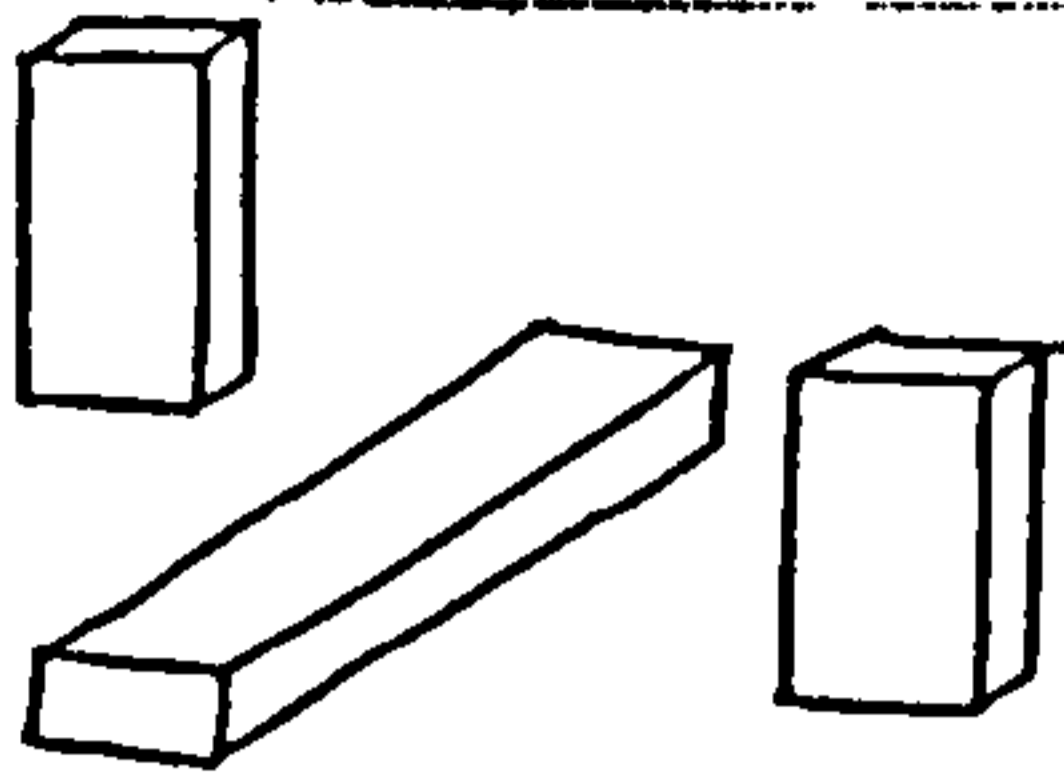


FIGURE 11.1 The main landscape architectural concepts of shaping open space.<sup>6</sup>

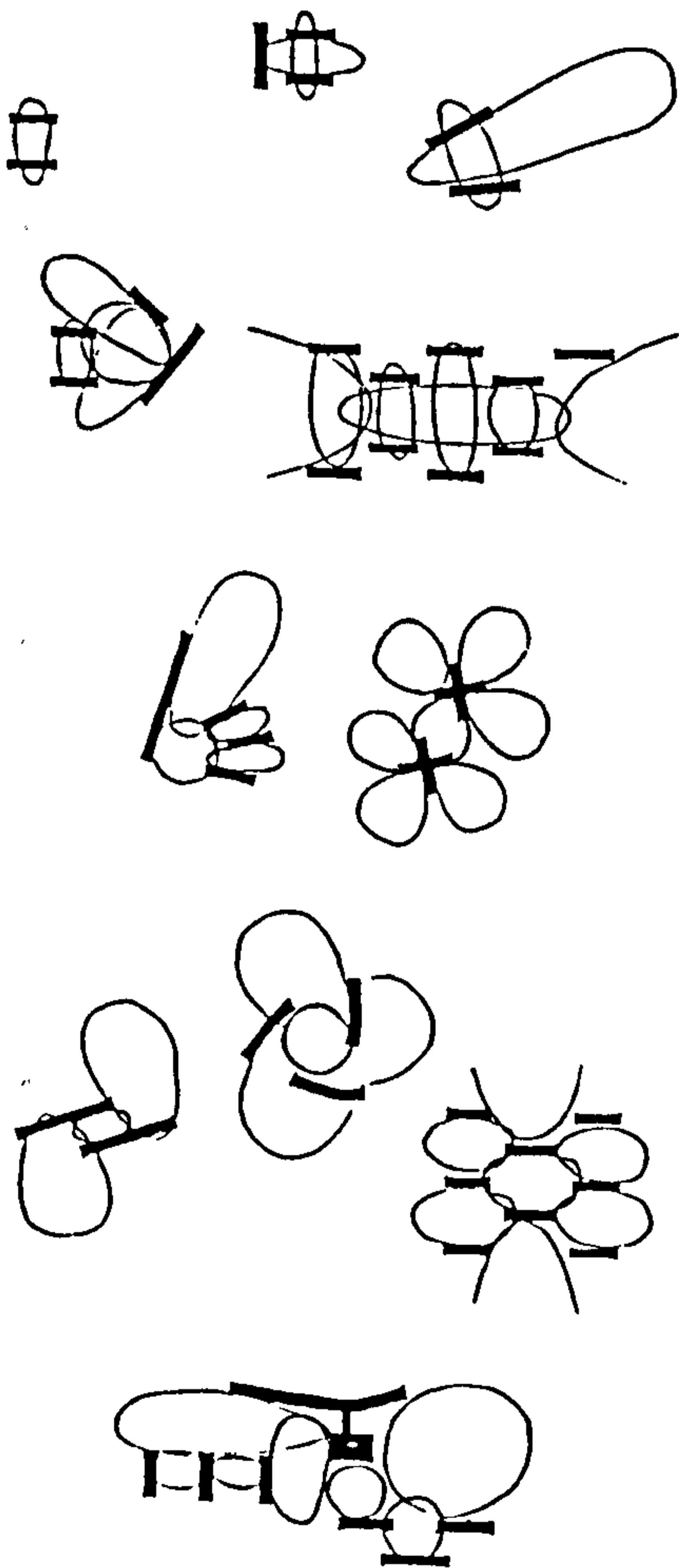


Composition of structures

Often the form of the structures themselves is not as important as that of the spaces they enclose. A single structure is perceived as an object in space. Two or more structures are perceived not alone as objects but also as related objects, and they gain or lose much of their significance in the relationship.

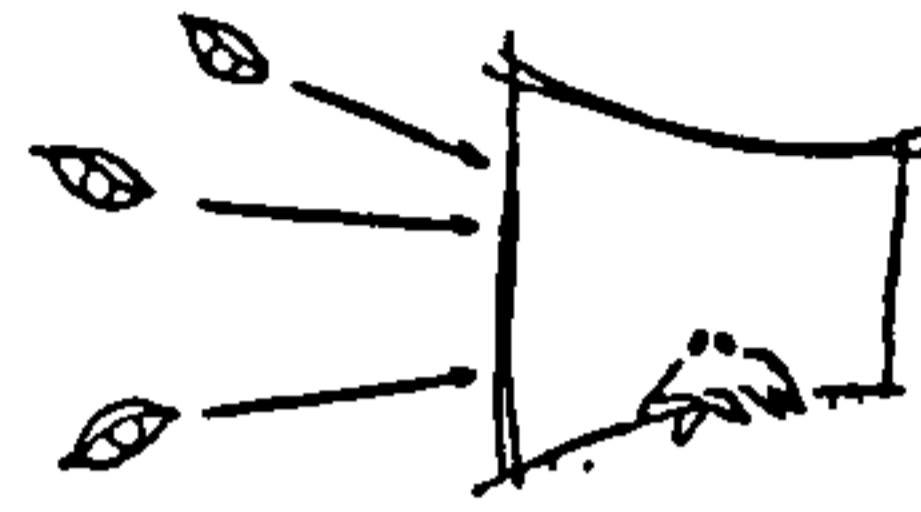
Static —

Dynamic

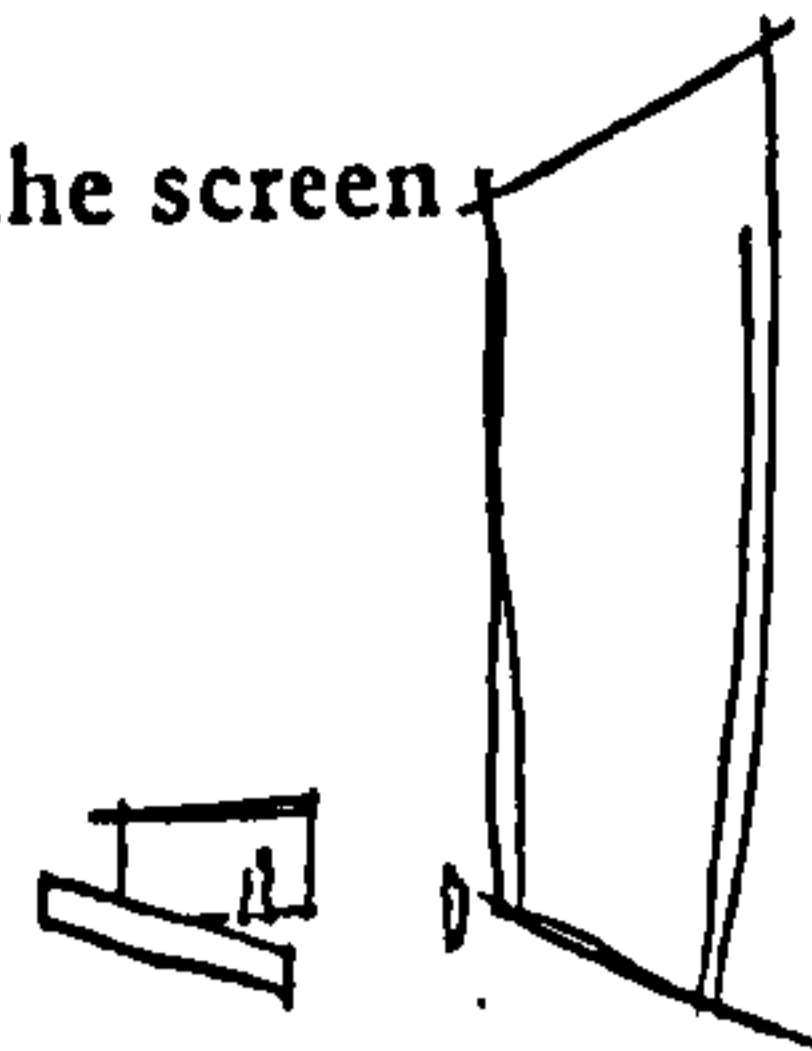


Opposing structures generate a field of dynamic tension.

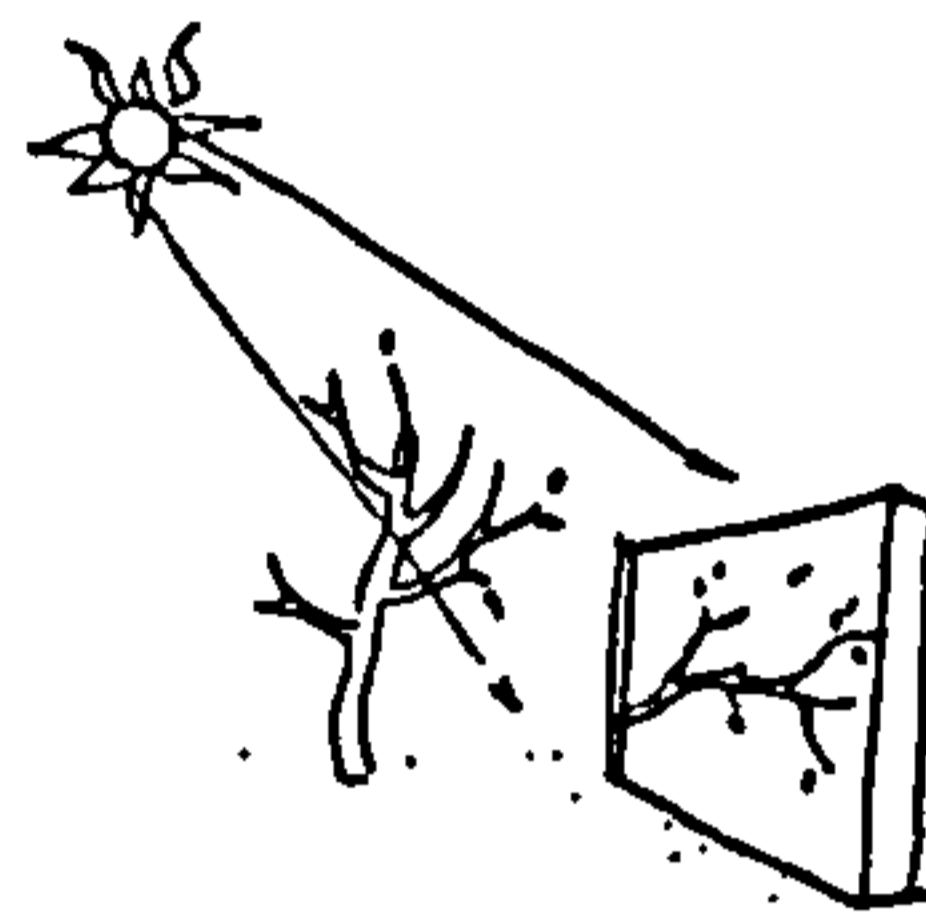
Functions of the screen



Privacy



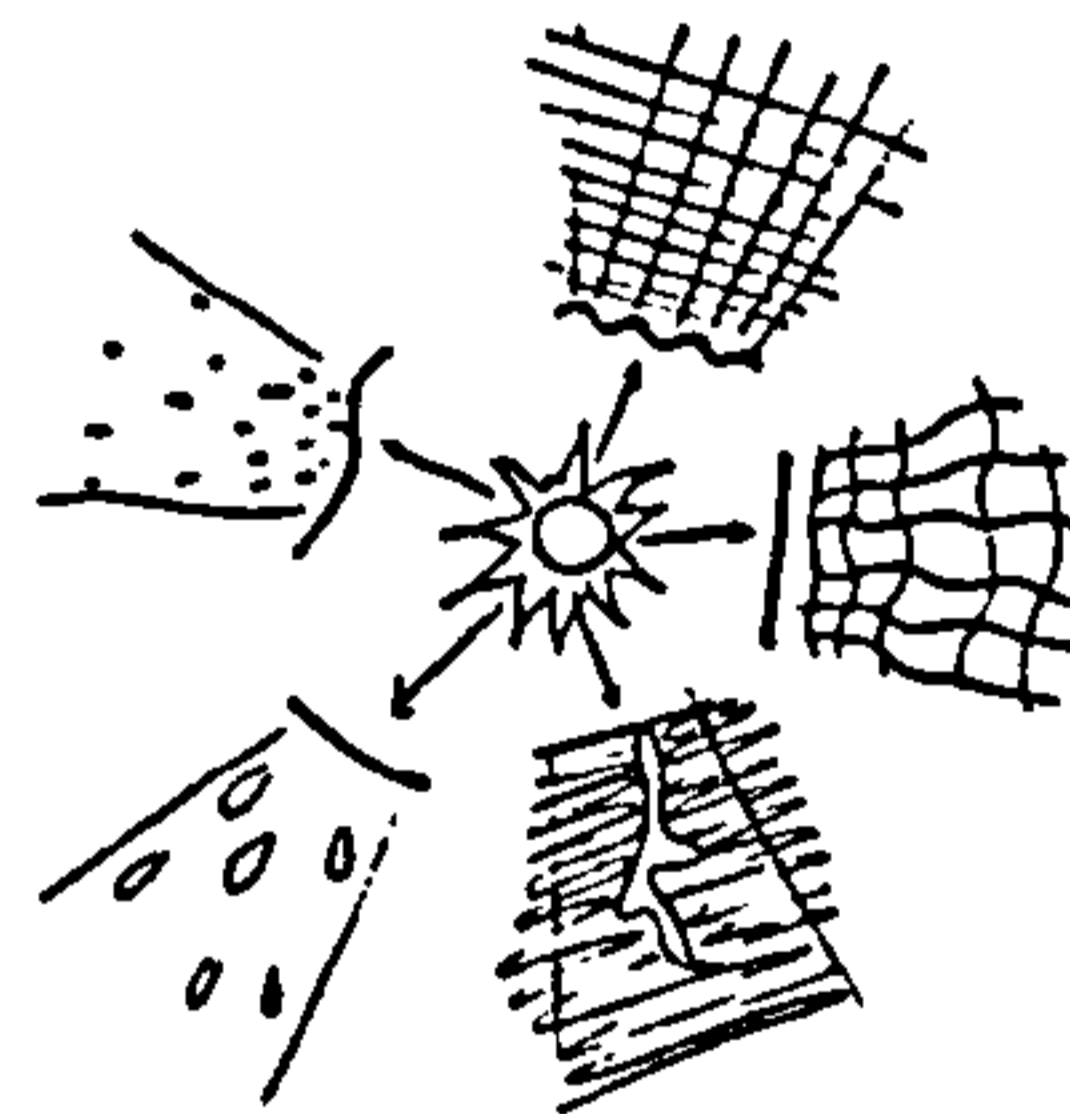
Scale induction



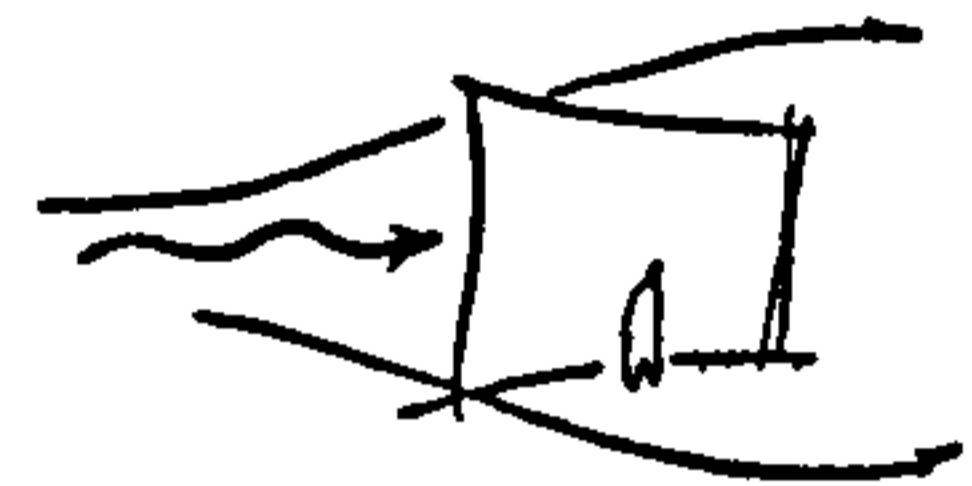
Receiver (shadow plane)



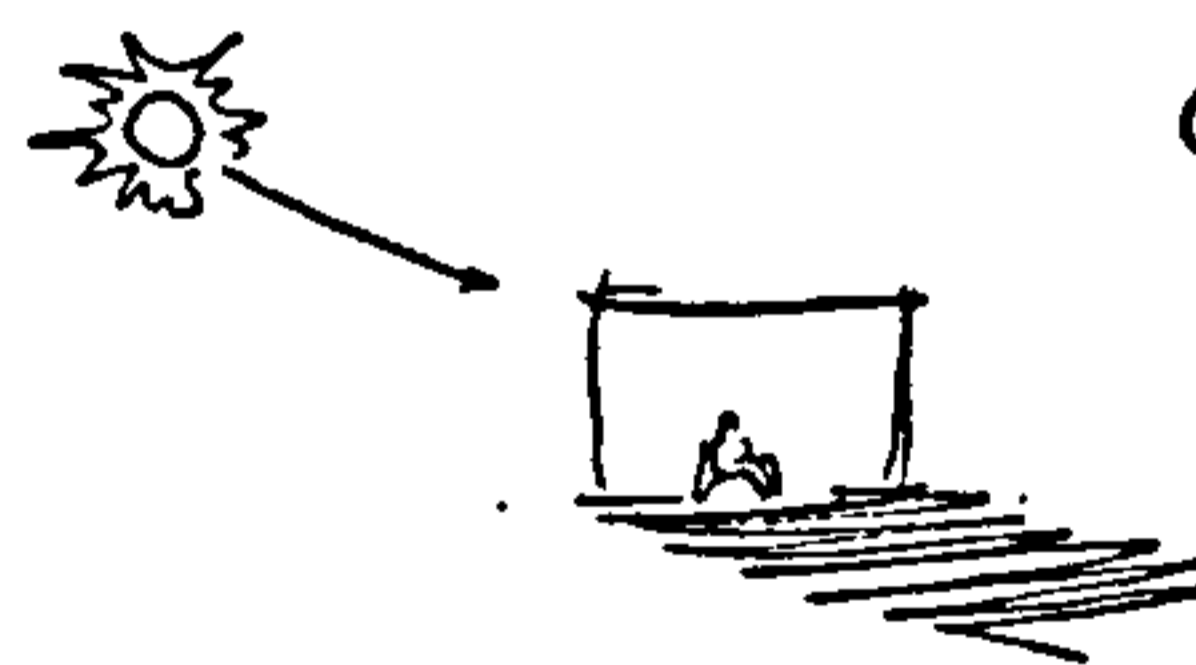
Decorative surface



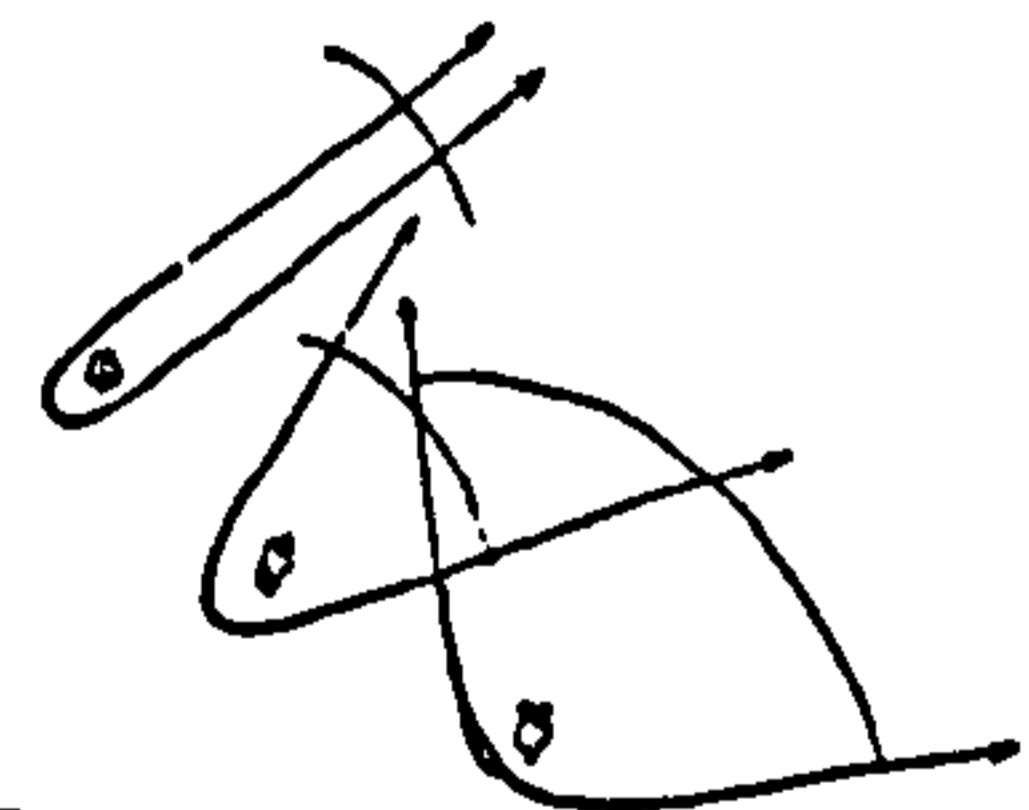
Transmitter (cast shadow pattern)



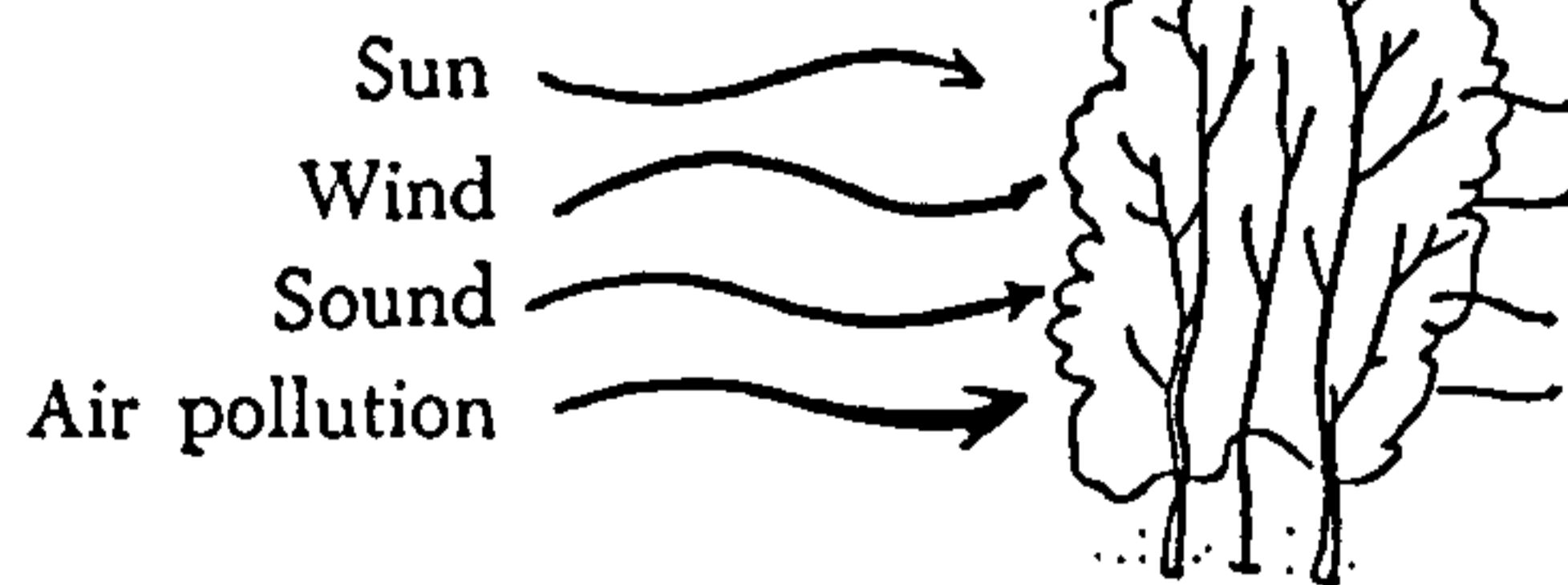
Wind control



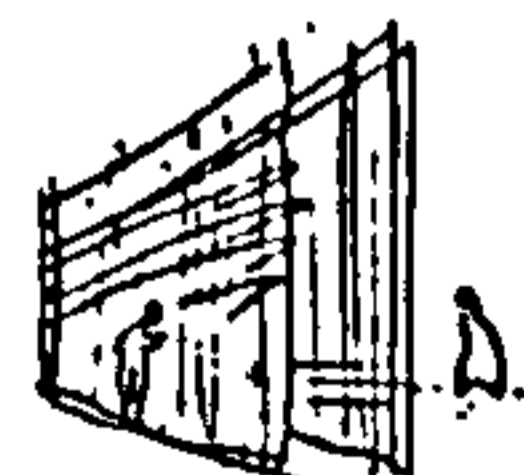
Sun control



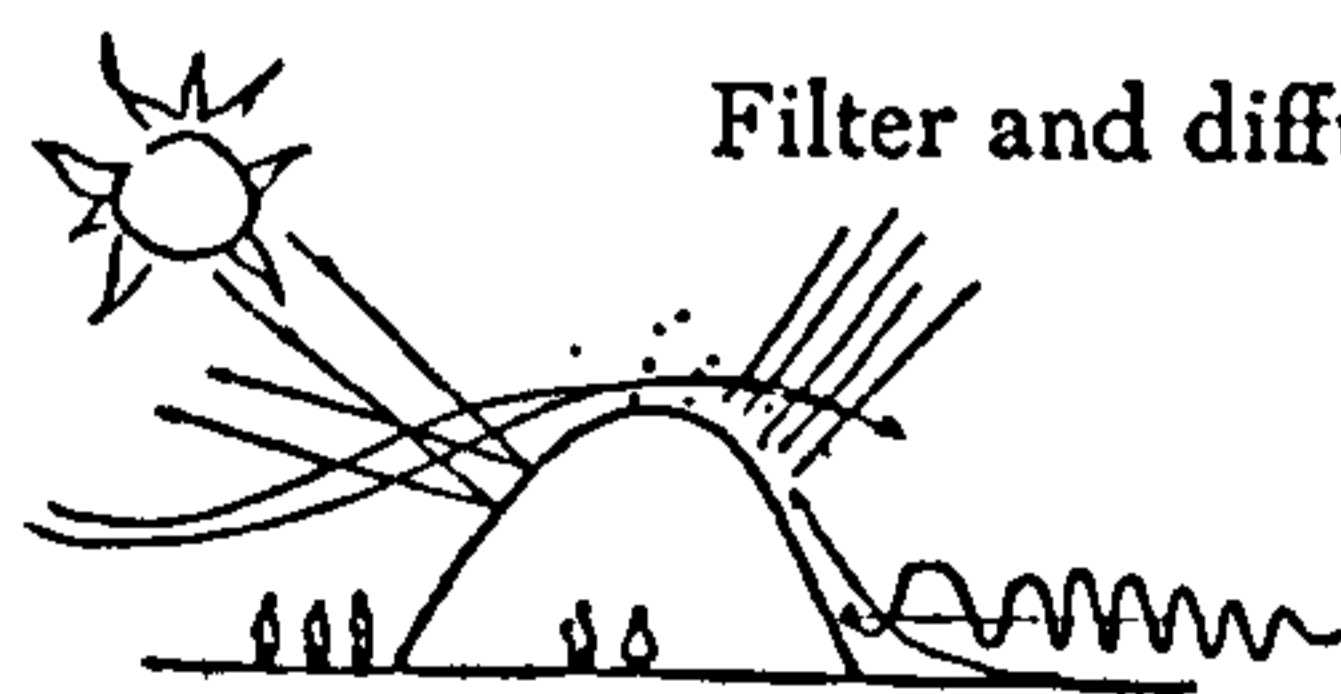
Visual control



Filter and diffuser



Mystery



Privacy, shelter, protection.

FIGURE 11.2 The main landscape architectural concepts of shaping open space.<sup>7</sup>



## COMPOSITION OF STRUCTURES

Often the form of the structures themselves (figure 11.1 top left) is not as that of the spaces they enclose. A single structure is perceived as an object in space. Two or more structures are perceived not alone as objects but also as related objects, and they gain or lose much of their significance in the relationship. In addition, each structural object has its own *invisible radiation force lines* that when they intersect each other may guide the designer to formulate the outdoor spaces in relation to them.

The Jeddah's Corniche composition structures can be considered as just a ribbon of pavement on the base plane of sea edges. A properly designed outdoor recreational promenade must be conceived in terms of volumes, dynamic, functions of the screens, shadow, wind and visual control which opposing structures in a manner to generate dynamic tension. The Corniche may be open where safe vision and pleasant views so directed to objects not cause privacy invasions, closed for screening, varied in its spatial conformation to provide interest and relief from fatigue, and modulated to reveal the landscape traversed in the best possible way. The Corniche road should be scientifically contrived, expanding and contracting, vary formed volume through which motorists may move speedily, safely and freely, enjoying the sea-scape designed to keep them relaxed, happy and alert.

## DYNAMIC OF OBJECTS OR INVISIBLE RADIATED DYNAMIC LINES

Each object opposing structures generate a field of dynamic tension.<sup>8</sup> A group of structures may be planned in opposition both to each other and to the landscape in which they rise, so that as one moves through or about them, one experiences an evolving composition of opposing elements, a resolution of tensions, and a sense of dynamic repose. A single tree may be so placed and trained as to hold a distant forest or group of small trees in balanced opposition and give them richer meaning. "It would seem, from a

comparison of the European and Oriental systems of planning, that the western mind is traditionally concerned primarily with the object or structure as it appears in space, while the eastern mind tends to think of structure primarily as a mean of defining and articulating a space or a complex of spaces."<sup>9</sup>

## **THE DEFINED OPEN SPACE**

Figure 11.2 represents how open spaces might be enclosed in full or in part by structural elements. Open spaces assume an architectural character when they are enclosed or articulated in volumetric progression and transitional zones. Such a space may be an extension of a building. Sometimes it is confined within the limits of a single building or enclosed by a building or vegetation groups. Each defined open space is an entity, complete within itself. But more, it is an inseparable part of each adjacent space or structure. It can be seen that such related spaces, structures, and the landscape that surrounds them must all be considered together in the process of design. "Each structure requires for its fullest effective expression a satisfying balance of mass and void." In figure 11.1 (top left) note how three solid structures walls have been integrated and defined by landscape treatments. In fact, all the figures demonstrate how to formulate, integrate and create balanced outdoor and enclosed spaces.

In terms of classification of objects, if we have three separated rooms created on space how many a landscape architect connect them? Again, the use of dynamic tension that relates each room to the others may help to solve this problem. As seen in the figure 11.1 top right, the three disconnected plan elements were connected by linkage (wall, foot path, row of plants etc.). Then, further landscape enhancements were added to articulate the plan circulation.

## **CONTROLLED PROGRESSIVE AND SPACE ARTICULATION**

This is a very important landscape architectural concept to be applied, almost, in every outdoor recreational site. The vertical articulated spaces with its planes not only provide containment, screen and backdrop but often become the dominant spatial feature as well.

In spatial design, the verticals generally have the greatest visual interest. Since, either moving about or seated within a volume, we are face to face with the verticals, we are usually more conscious of them than of either the base or the overhead. "One of the most distressing of all visual experiences is to have a vertical plane terminate at or near eye level, particularly in the case of a fence or a wall. The top of such a wall or screen seems to do violence to the eyes of those who pass or see it."<sup>10</sup>

The designer should treat these vertical and articulated enclosed spaces and places very carefully. For example, the most pleasant of visual treats is to have the eye come comfortably and legally to rest upon an object or plane not upon others family's women so placed that it falls into pleasing perspective and focus to sculpture, tree or any attractive things.

Verticals as articulators are the missing concept in the Corniche. As seen in figures of 11.1 and 11.2, verticals reinforce and explain the traffic and use patterns of the base plane. These verticals of any space elucidate the plan. They must attract, deflect, direct, detain, receive and accommodate the planned and intended use and functions as the area demands. "The plan pattern of the base plane most often sets the theme of a space, and the verticals most often modulate this theme and produce those variations that develop the rich harmonies."<sup>11</sup>

Verticals also can be considered as controlling elements. The vertical structures or planes provide a certain degree and kind of spatial enclosure for protection issues. The verticals are important in the control of wind, breeze, sunlight, shadow, temperature, sound and above all privacy of users. These verticals serve as screens for privacy, scale induction, receiver, decorative, transmitter, filter and diffuser and mystery.

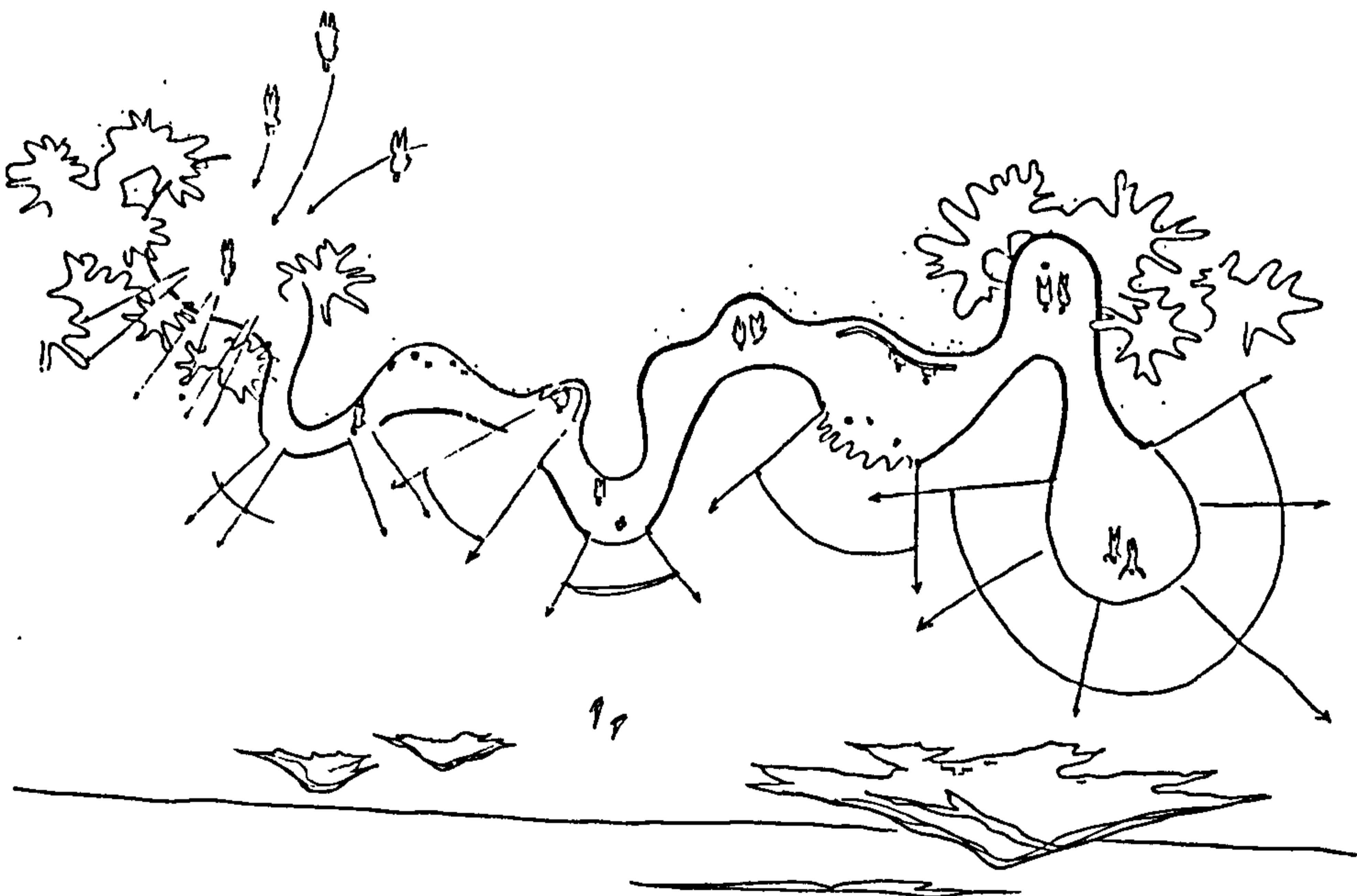
The vertical enclosure must not usually be seen from within the volume alone but in the round as well. Vertical space enframers, together with the spaces they enclose, become in total a unified landscape element to be related to all other landscape features. This is because the lack of effective enclosure is the key to most unsatisfactory spaces or places of outdoor recreation domains. Significantly, the planners and designers must stress strongly the need for the proper type and degree of vertical definition. All good site development is marked by the organisation of vertical (and overhead) planes to provide both optimum enclosure and maximum satisfaction.

### **GUIDELINES FOR DEVELOPING OUTDOOR RECREATION AREAS TO HELP SOLVE SOME OF THE PROBLEMS IDENTIFIED.**

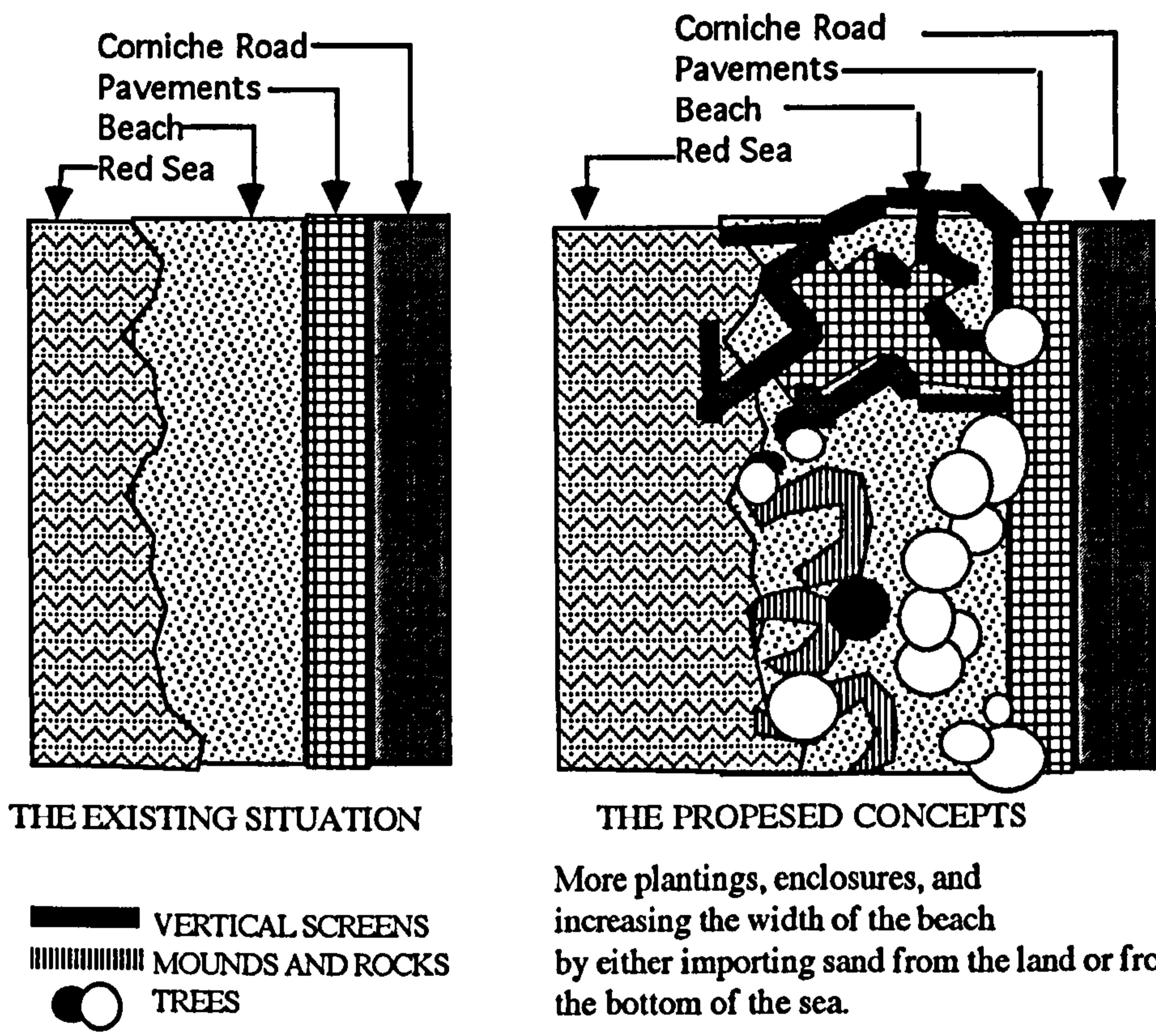
**F**ROM the previous landscape concepts of figures 11.1 and 11.2 as well as from the researcher's findings and the users' perceptions of problems reflected in the survey, the following guidelines are developed for Jeddah's Corniche areas to solve some of this research's problems (see figures 11.3 to 11.6). The outdoor facilities must consist of cleared flat and raised areas to avoid the flooding problem, as well as to provide levelled areas for privacy and other sea panorama views. There must be an adequate safety-distance between road traffic or body of water. At least 30 - 50 metres should be provided as the least adequate space between traffic and recreational sites. This is public-use space for strolling or jogging on the shoreline. This also provides a level of privacy for visitors. Each recreational site must be adequate in terms of its size and facilities, with the separation of bachelors' areas from family domains (Figure 11.4). Shaded sitting areas with trash cans, with adequate car parking as well as privacy vertically screened on all 3 sides, with a height of 2 to 2.5 m semi-screened or open to the sea direction with a height of 0.6 to 0.75 m. This variance between height of screens, as mentioned before, to very carefully determined according to the desired degree of protection. For example, the height of 2 to 2.5 m must be preserved for families, with 0.6 to 0.75m for those activities which did not require a high degree of privacy. The

designer must provide adequate vertical screens according to function, use and degree of protection.

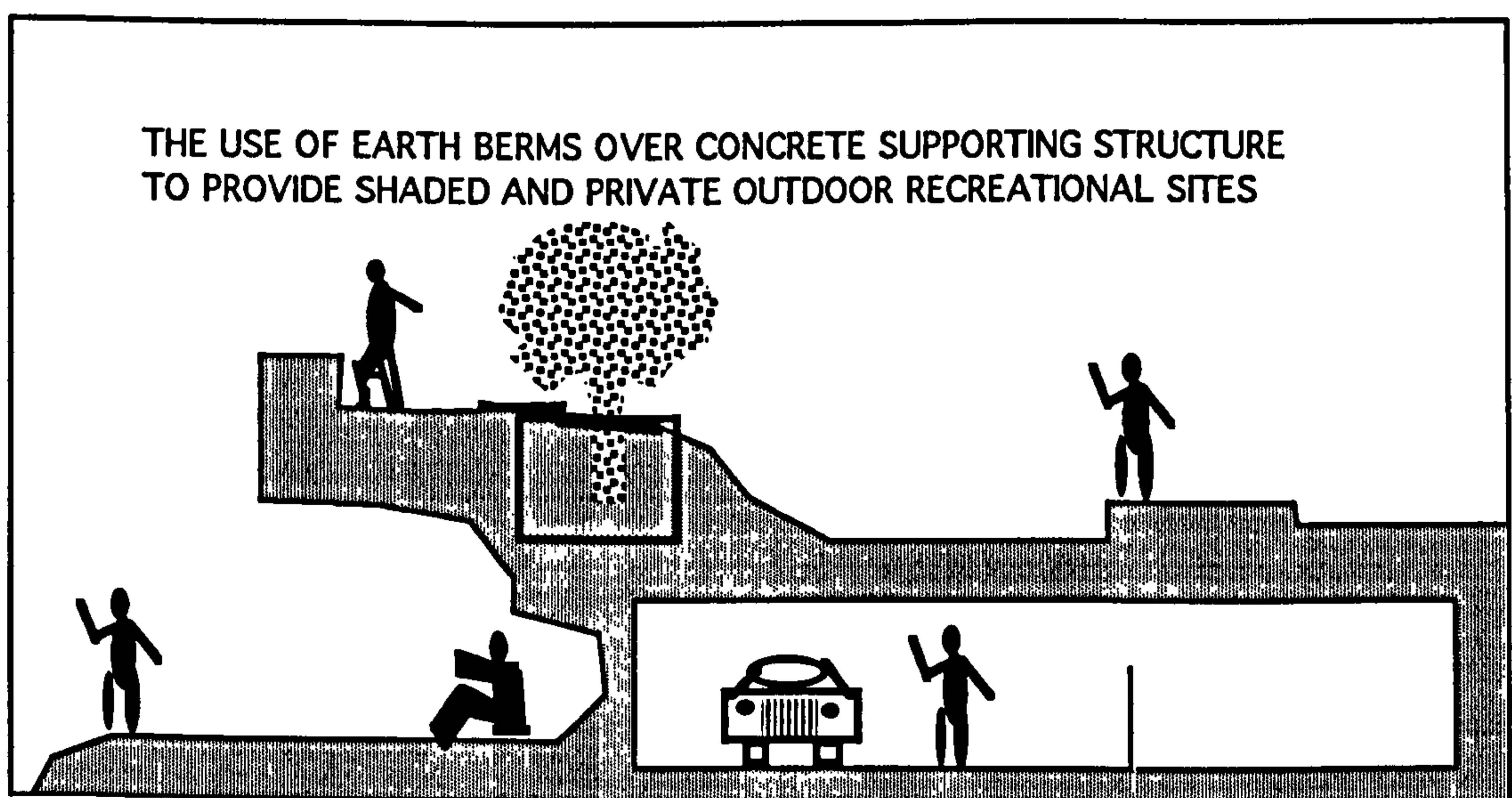
Beach recreational facilities, picnic areas, and relaxing pleasant, shaded sites with adequate women's areas need to be provided. Also of importance of the "modulation of a view." From a glimpse through loose foliage, to enframing slot, to wider sector, to reverse interest, to vista, to object seen against the view, to objects placed against the view seen through a film of fabric, to concentration in a cave like recess, to full, exuberant sweep<sup>12</sup>(Figure 11.3).



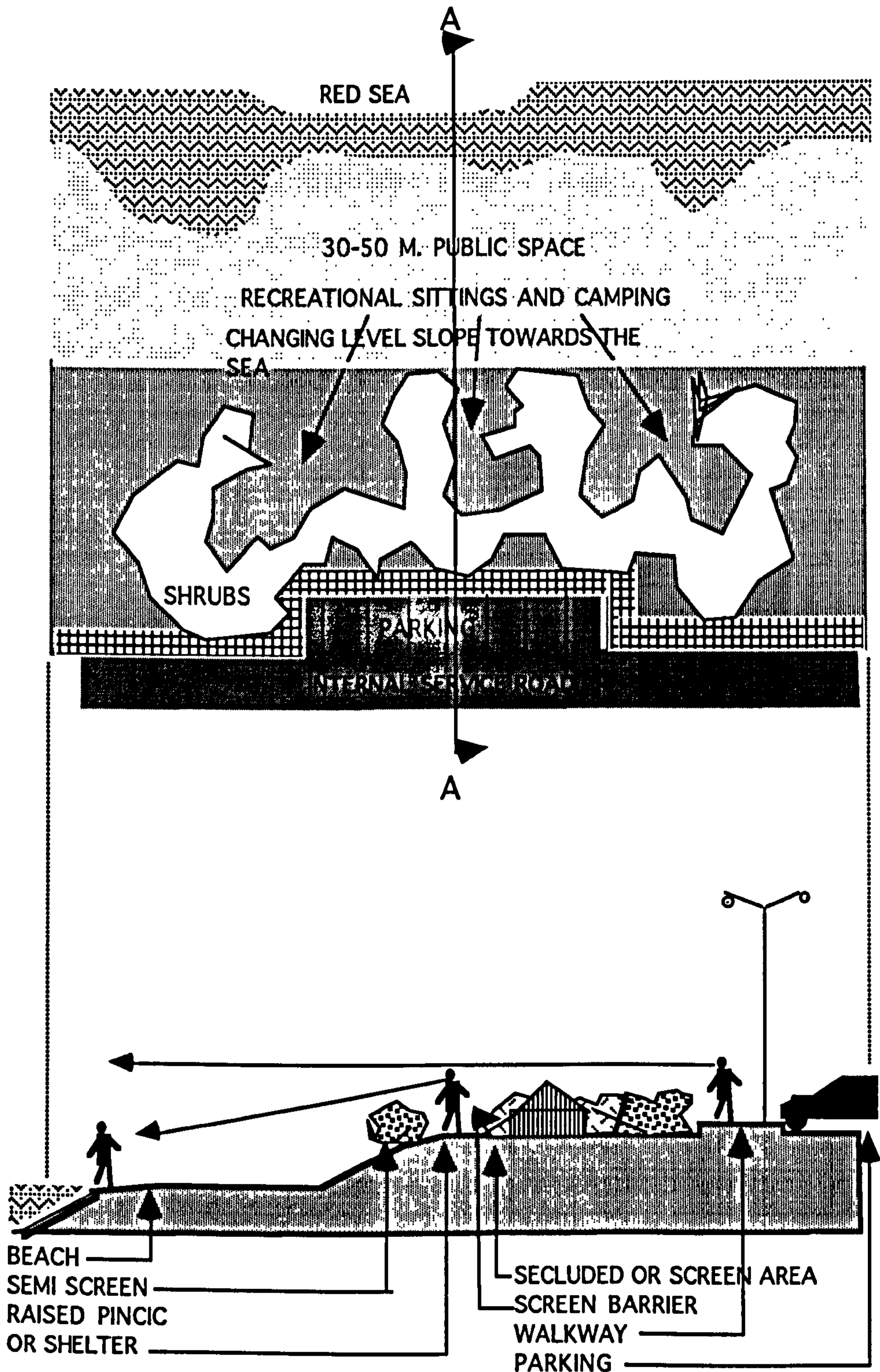
**FIGURE 11.3** *The best view is not always or often the full view.*



**FIGURE 11.4** An illustrative diagrammatic plan shows how the existing outdoor sea-side recreational areas can be modified to create a more satisfactory layout which preserves privacy and shifts visitors from sitting on the pavements.

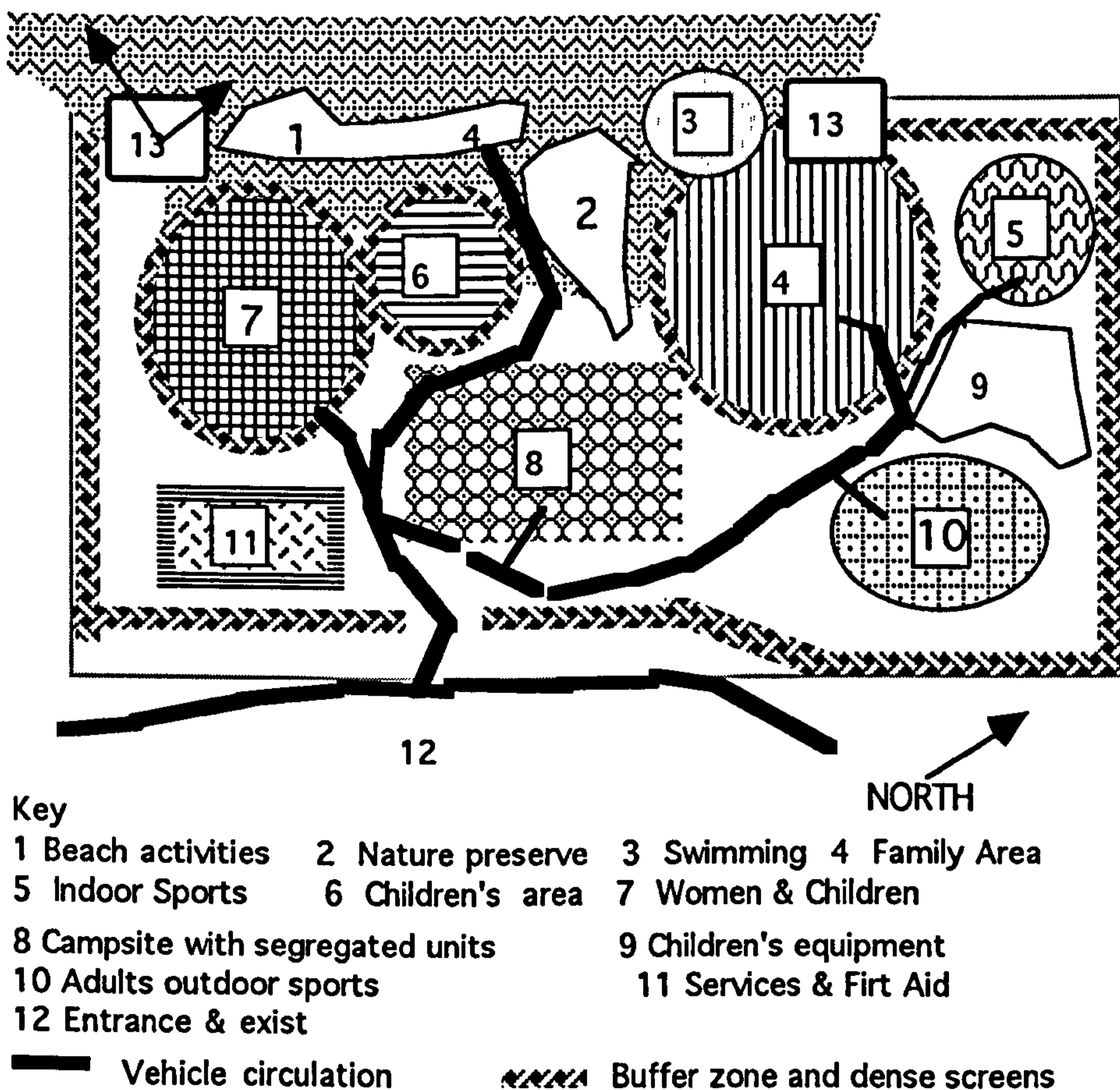


**FIGURE 11.5** The use of earth berms to create shaded, private and cool outdoor recreational areas



**FIGURE 11.6** *Outdoor recreational site: hierarchy of spaces, views, separated and secluded areas for different groups of users. As well as design problems eased with spatial and temporal zoning for males and females.*

In short, this research has explored a number of social and physical problems that are inherent in some Saudi outdoor recreational areas. The data showed that many social inquiries should be carried out in the field of outdoor recreational research in Saudi Arabia, in particular, and in all Muslim countries in general. This research has attempted to provide an understanding of these social and physical matters of open spaces in relation to Jeddah's Corniche, which can be considered as a means to extract some guidelines and principles in determining open space design. In other words the distinctive needs and characteristics of Saudi society might help in developing an approach to shape the desired public outdoor leisure provisions within the boundary of local religion and convention. Figure 11.7 illustrates a typical example of an outdoor camping site that might increase people's satisfaction and provide them with more varied opportunities and services.



**FIGURE 11.7** *Planning campsite: concept illustrating facility relationship*



## RECOMMENDATIONS

There is only one main type of agency involved in Saudi outdoor urban open space and landscape design: the municipality. Due to the lack of highly trained landscape architect professionals with a sound Islamic background the overall outdoor planning and design was undertaken by non-landscape architects or was undertaken without Islamic background consultants. And if there is a landscape architect, he will find himself handicapped with already decided patterns, and his role now is to fill the gaps left behind, or decorate, colour and enhance the appearance. But one might ask to what extent can modification within the present overall structure solve problems? Fortunately the landscape architectural professional can always help in improving towards the better rather than worse, although it is more difficult to change already designed patterns than to shape new ones. First of all, and in order to modify what already exists, it is very important to make a distinction between the recreational role of open space, in the sense of its use for recreational purposes, and the visual role of open space, in the sense of its effect in enhancing the visual amenity of the surrounding areas, as well as how visual corridors may be directed towards the natural or man-made attractions rather than towards private domains. It is very important to convey the actual message and purpose of the designed open space, that it must be clear to the public that the open space is for recreational use and not simply to look at.

The role of the landscape designer must be considered. In designing or modifying existing open spaces, there are a number of general principles which the designer should take into consideration such as the many possible functions of open space. It may for example provide opportunities for various kinds of recreation, provide a visual controlled setting, screen eyesore features as well as provide secluded areas for families. This is achieved by the balance between openness and enclosure, by creating privacy and shelter, bringing nature back into the man-made urban environment.

Another point needs to be integrated at this stage which is the planners, often they represent a fragmented two-dimensional land-use on plans, but the task given to the landscape architect is representation or visualising how a three-dimensional use of space,

its space, volumes, articulation and the change of levels and hierarchies look in reality. When designing open space for outdoor recreational purposes, the designer must consider how the open space will be used when completed. Depending on the population characteristics of a particular area and the availability of alternative recreational and social facilities in the area, it may be that an open space will be over-used or used for activities for which it was not designed. This may ultimately spoil the recreational effectiveness of the open space, and/or it will create social or physical and appearance problems.

When making provision for different outdoor recreation activities within a single open space, the designer should try to create various areas with different sizes and gradual transition zones to lead from one area to another. In addition, the design should ensure that the activities are compatible, or that potential conflicts will be avoided through appropriate segregation. Regard must also be paid to the essential matters of safety and convenience at all times. It should be remembered that the visual attractiveness of a particular open space is not the sole determinant of people's satisfaction with it. People may consider an open space to be visually attractive while also considering it to be inconvenient or even dangerous and cause social tension.

Unfortunately, some of the existing patterns were planned without considering future adaptability. For example, Jeddah's Corniche has been designed and planned without taking into account fully how future expansion can take place to meet the increasing demand for outdoor coastal recreation.

The following recommendations might help in modifying the existing overall structure to solve some of the problems. Figures 11.8 and 11.9 represents conceptual diagrams that must, if possible, be applied to all present areas that need modification.

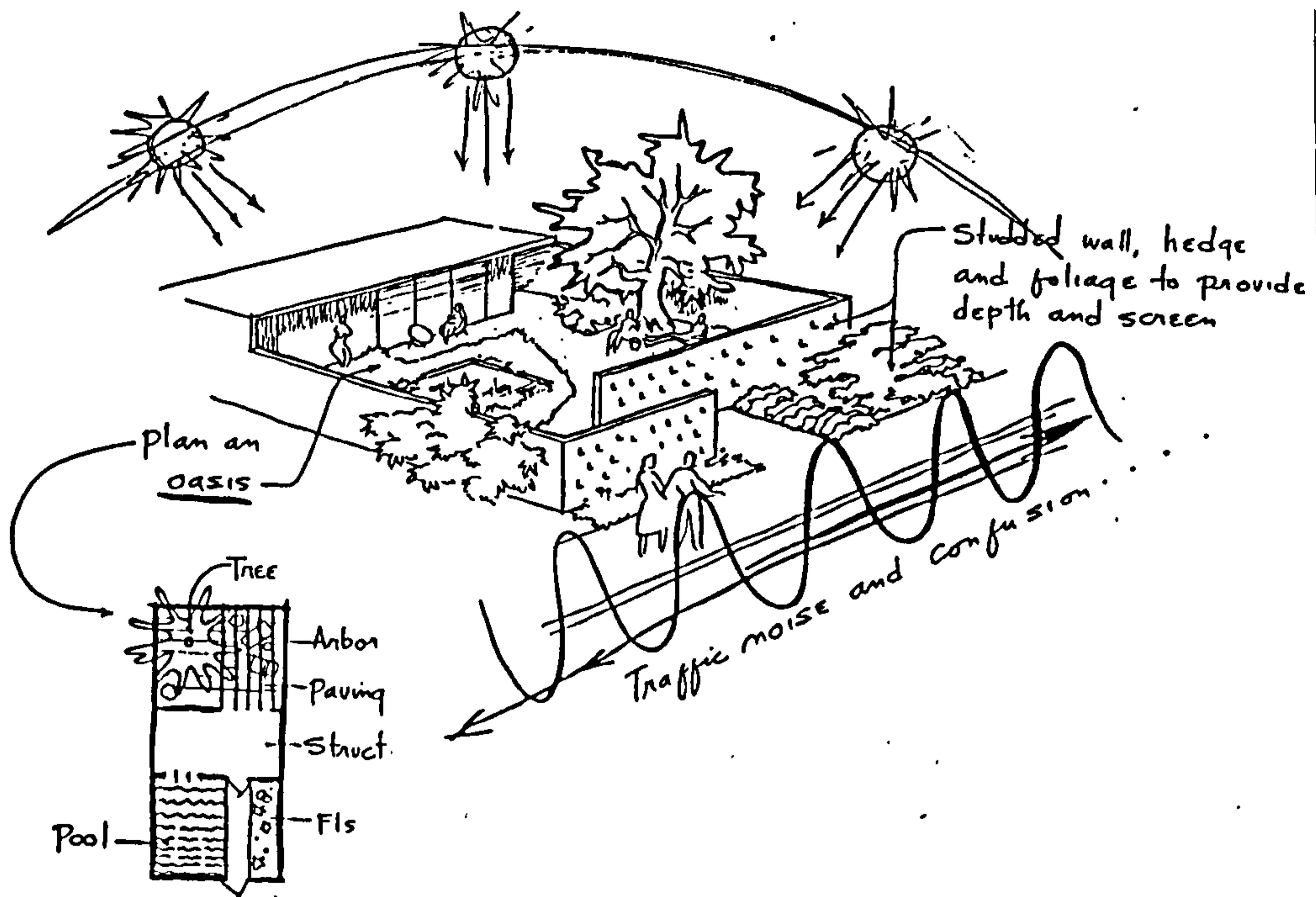


FIGURE 11.8 Design for depth adjacent to street<sup>13</sup>

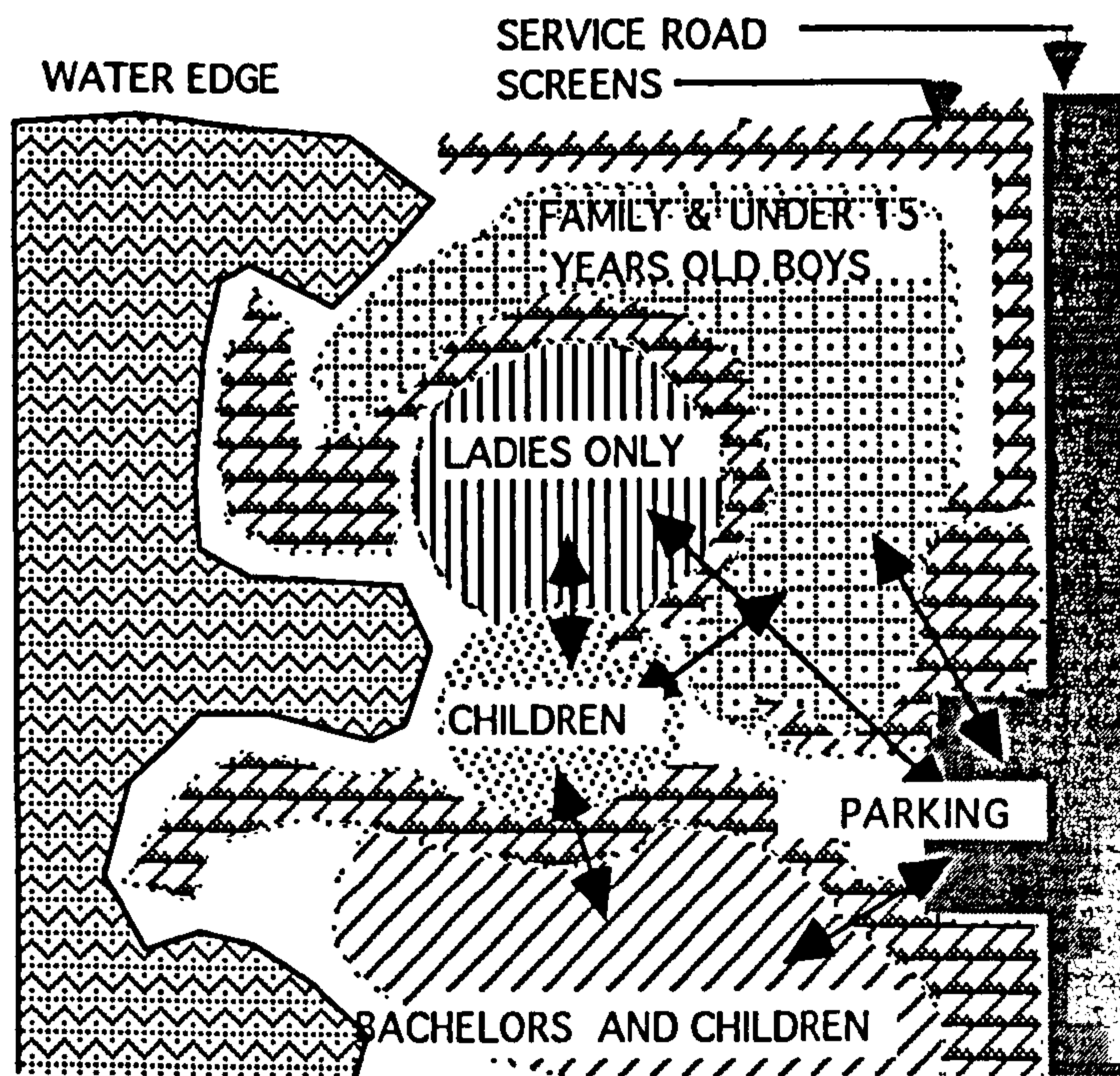
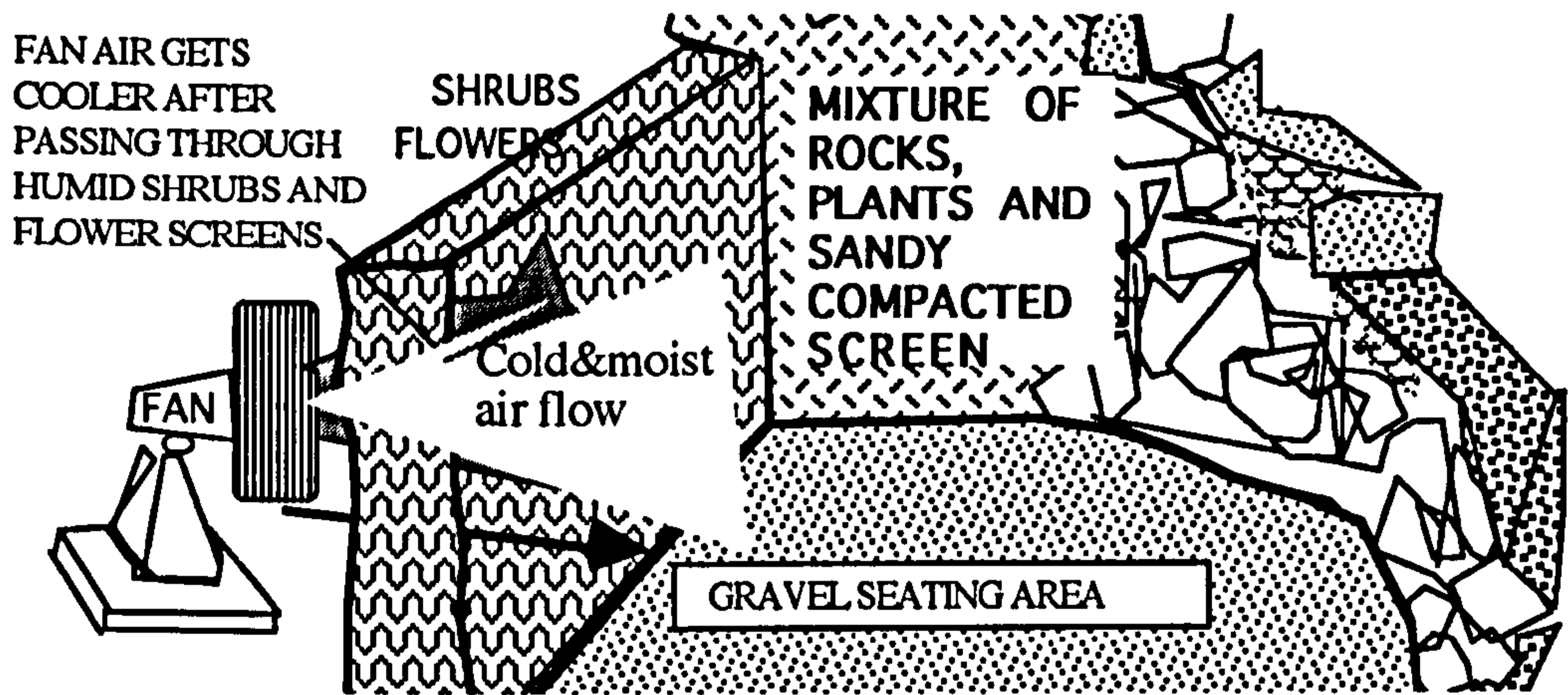


FIGURE 11.9 A suggested land use concept which divides the open space into different zones according to users' needs and behaviour

In order to moderate the sheltered, secluded ladies or family outdoor open areas the following figure 11.10 illustrates, as an example, how the integration of soft, hard and modern technological developments might help in providing pleasant outdoor rooms in the public urban open spaces. This involves the use of shrubs, rocks, mounds and

trees as well as the use of artificial fans that circulate the air movement throughout shrubs to create a cooler environment.



**FIGURE 11.10** *A conceptual idea of modifying some existing two-dimensional open exposed areas by creating various kinds of vertical screens, and taking advantage of fans to increase air circulation and to create more convenient sitting areas.*

Moreover the ecological, biological and environmental aspects were, to a large extent, not thought through. This is because those who design outdoor open spaces are architects, planners, mechanical engineers and electrical engineers. Indeed, anyone who has a degree in engineering can be employed by the government and be called "an engineer", regardless of what his specialisation is. For example, in some municipalities an agricultural engineer or mechanical engineer has the responsibility for designing outdoor gardens and parks. That results in different goals towards parks, poorly designed outdoor recreational open spaces, and inadequate implementation which often has conflicting goals and problems. However, the researcher offers a set of recommendations that might assist the decision-makers in implementing their decisions properly to benefit both users and outdoor open space planning and design.

The study indicates a strong need to cater for the privacy issue in relation to open spaces in Saudi Arabia. To help achieve better landscape design the author suggests that a decision makers' committee be set up consisting of representatives from social, physical, economic, psychological and religious fields, under the direction of a well-qualified professional environmental designer (landscape architect). This committee should meet regularly to discuss current patterns, problems and management. To reach

an adequate decision the committee should follow the decision making process in the following model, as suggested by Elbing (see figure 11.11).<sup>14</sup>

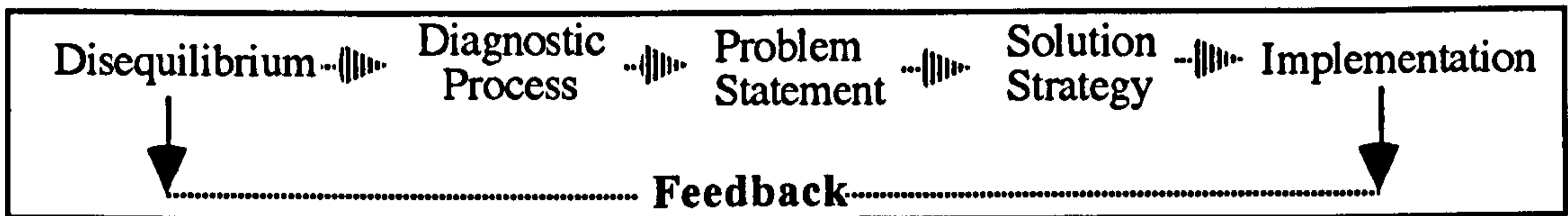


FIGURE 11.11 *Decision making process*<sup>15</sup>

Elbing in his model indicates that the manager sometimes experiences feelings of not being in equilibrium and regards some situations as problem situations. The response to the disequilibrium in this case is to diagnose the problem which causes the disequilibrium, then to define the problem that needs to be solved. The manager then selects a method and a solution to solve the disequilibrium. Finally, implementation of the decision is made, whether or not it actually leads to the solution of the problem that caused disequilibrium. However, in looking at decision making as a process, the choice will be a continuous feedback of information for implementing the decision.

It is worth mentioning that many municipality employees have no idea about what landscape architecture is. It is only in the 1980s that the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia has had a very few landscape architects that graduated from local universities, especially King Abdul Aziz University, which has a school of environmental design with three departments of Architecture, Landscape Architecture and Regional Planning. But unfortunately, many of those few who graduated were offered positions in non-landscape architectural departments, such as the planning department, engineering management and other municipality departments. In fact, the researcher has interviewed some of those landscape architects, and asked them why they insist on reproducing some very poor outdoor designs despite all they know about the landscape approach? In fact their reply and claims were related to the existing municipality standards which indicate, for example, pavements made of tiles with tree pots in the middle. It seems that some municipalities are now seeing the results of their actions on people's behaviour and attitudes. But the problem of creating an organisation in which landscape architects oversees urban projects has still to be thought of.

By recognising the problems in the overall pattern among different recreational sites, the Municipality Committee should promote a conflict resolution. Increasing the feedback from all related fields will improve the output which will result in better outdoor urban open spaces and parks that satisfy users.

## **RECOMMENDATIONS FOR THE MUNICIPALITIES**

The following are some important points which may help in easing, solving and enhancing some of the existing problems in the planning and design of outdoor recreational approaches.

Due to the increasing public demand for outdoor recreational activities, the municipality should adopt the policy of zoning parts in space and time for both male and female recreational activities. In the process of the landscape design for outdoor recreational provision, the municipality ought to consult with other related environmental, social, economic, religious, ecological, biological and all environmental bodies in order to have a better, consistent and adequate understanding about the location, number, kind, and pattern of facilities and also the type of programs and management that are required. For example, in deciding to shape a particular outdoor recreational area, first of all a decision must be made about what its purpose is, how it might be used, its level of use, orientation, its compatibility with religious teaching and law (*Shari'a*), local traditions and culture. There is a need to consult other related environmental designers to decide how the overall layout and physical structure may be formed in harmony with nature.

The on-going process of upgrading the municipality should include maintenance programs to reduce litter, insects and smells to enhance the sea-side open spaces. This includes insuring user satisfaction with public facilities by seeing that toilets are cleaned, that sufficient numbers of good quality are provided, and that small praying areas are provided on each recreational site.

The main elements that may influence social behaviour and attitudes to accept or reject such outdoor spaces are accessibility, attractiveness, activities, functions, layout, visual corridors, contact and distance between recreational sites. The actual physical

environment of various outdoor spaces must reflect the actual concern for privacy and for proper behaviour. The actual concern for privacy and for proper behaviour must be reflected in the development of the physical environments within the context of local culture, particularly, more concern in visual privacy, and the importance of protecting female members from the eyes of male strangers.

*"When a child opens its eyes for the first time, a bewildering array of sensory data comes to view. Pattern recognition was vital to man's success as a hunter. As the child grows, it learns to recognise different kinds of pattern: food, mother, house, friend, heat, fear, work, play, speed, and so forth. The child then learns a language to describe the patterns. Some parts of the language depend on words, others on gestures and actions - a raised hand, a kiss, or a certain sitting position. 'Leaving home' implies entering into a new web of physical and social patterns. If that child becomes a landscape designer, he or she must learn how places are made, what makes them 'good' or 'bad', from various standpoints, and how they may be changed. All this requires knowledge of new patterns and of a new language with which to handle them. The language is more than words. It embraces actions, habits, models, numbers, diagrams and drawings. They are used to describe complex processes: erosion, growth, transport, energy, diversity, security, enclosure, circulation, proportion, texture and grain. Some parts of the language will be shared with the general population. Others will be unique to planners and landscape designers; others to the individual. In talking of landscape design, many general ideas can be described as patterns. The word provides a common currency to exchange the different ways of analysing places."<sup>16</sup>*

An adequate number of landscape architects must be shared within the overall decision making framework, as well as due to educate people about landscape by broadcasting the meaning, the function and the importance of landscape architecture and its roles in shaping all outdoor areas. Because of the lack of implementing the landscape architects' concepts and techniques, conflicts emerged from the existing outdoor recreational planning and design of the provisions which affects people's behaviour and attitudes. "This is the time of the landscape architect . . . All that is needed is for us to adopt a more aggressive stance towards what we do, to change how others perceive us (the problem does not lie in the title - *Was Landscape Architecture a Good Idea* ) . . . landscape architecture is indeed a profession and that we are the right people for the job".<sup>17</sup>

## Notes And References

---

- 1 Moggridge, H. (1986) "The delights and problems of practice" in: E., Penning-Rowsell and D., Lowenthal Landscape Meanings and Values, (London: Allen and Unwin), 105-110
- 3 Ibid. p. 175
- 4 Al-Madinah, the daily newspaper, No. 7927,, Jan. 1989
- 5 Ibid. 135-235
- 6 Simonds, J. (1983) Landscape Architecture: A manual of Site Planning and Design (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company).
- 7 Ibid. p. 240
- 8 Ibid. p. 240
- 9 Ibid. p. 245
- 10 Ibid. p. 164
- 11 Ibid. p.165
- 12 Ibid. p. 175
- 13 Ibid. p. 176
- 14 Elbing, A. (1970) Behaviour Decision in Organisation (Glenview, Illinois Scott Foresman), p. 130.
- 15 Ibid.
- 16 Turner, T. (1991) "Pattern Analysis" in: Landscape Design (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute) October 1991, No. 204, p.40
- 17 Miller, T. (1992) "The ineffectual profession?" in: Landscape Design (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute), June 1992, No. 211, pp. 12-13



# BIBLIOGRAPHY

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 'Ali, A. Y., (1989), The Holy Qura'n , Text, translation and commentary , (Amana Corp., Brentwood, Maryland).
- Abd-el Wassie , A. (1970), Education in Saudi Arabia, (Glasgow: Robert Macmillan & Co Ltd.)
- Abu Huthaifah, I.(1987), The Allowed Recreation, (In Arabic: *Allahw Al-Mubah*), (Tanta: Al-Sahabah Library).
- Ackoff, R. (1953), The Design of Social Research, (USA: The University of Chicago Press).
- Akbar, J., (1984), Responsibility and the Traditional Muslim Built Environment, unpublished PhD Diss., MIT
- Al-Abdally, A.M.(1991), For Youth Only, (In Arabic *Lil-Shaba'b Faghat*), (Riyadh: Dar Al-Manar in Kharj), p.4
- Al-Abdullah, M., (1991), Saudi Outdoor Recreational Needs: A Case Study of Dammam Metropolitan Area, unpublished MLA thesis, King Faisal University, Dammam, Saudi Arabia, p.19
- Al-Nowaiser, M., (1985), "The Role of the Traditional and Modern Rural Settlements on the Quality of Environmental Experience in Saudi Arabia", in: Second Saudi Engineerers Conference, king Fahad University for Petroleum & Minerals, Dahrn, Saudi Arabia.
- Al-Ansari, A.,(1982), Encyclopeda of Jeddah's History, (In Arabic: *Mawsooat Tari'kh Madinat Juddah*), 3rd ed., 2 vol.,( Cairo: Dar Misr Leltiba'ah.
- Al-Assaf, S., (1989), Guidebook for the Researcher in Behavioural Science, (In Arabic: *Dali'l Albaheth fi Al-Uloo'm Assolok'eyyah*), (Riyadh: Al-Ebikan for Printing and Publishing)
- Al-Awais, S.A., (1986), Parks for Saudi Arabia, unpublished Master thesis, University of Arizona).
- Al-Baladiyat Magazine, (1989), (Riyadh: Ministry of Municipality & Rural Affairs). No 35
- Al-Bothie, I. (1986), Urban Residential Open Spaces in Riyadh, MUD, King Saud University).
- Al-Fakahani, Hassan, (N.D.), Jeddah : The Bride of the Red Sea: Progress and Development(Cairo: The Arabian Publishing House for Encyclopaedias).
- Al-Farsi, F., (1986), Saudi Arabia : A Case Study in Development, 2nd edit., (London: Kegan Paul International Limited).p. 47.
- Al-Hathloul, S., (1988), Traditional, Continuity and Change in the Physical Environment: The Arab-Muslim City, unpublishd Ph.D. Diss., MIT, p. 250
- Al-Hemiddi, N., (1987), The Development of Saiah Park, An Urban Park in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, with Emphasis on Solving Problems with the Picnic Area of the Families' Park,AreaUnpublished MLA thesis, University of Southern California.
- Al-Hijji, A. A., (1989), Leisure Behaviour and Recreation Planning in Saudi Arabia: With particular reference to Riyadh; a geographical study, unpublished Ph.D. thesis, University of Exeter.
- Al-Hussayen, M. (1986), Alternatives to Achieve Privacy in Al-Swaidi Park - Riyadh, (In Arabic: *Badaiel Letahqiq Alkhusoueyyah fi Muntazah Al-Swaidi Be Arriyadh*), in: The Circle of Architecture and Environment, Edited by Al-Hathloul et al, Riyadh: King Saud University, p. 10-3

**AL-Hussien, M., (1985), "Alternatives to Obtaine Privacy in Al-Sawady Park, Riyadh, Saudi Arabia", a paper submitted to Symbosiom in Urban and Environment, held in 29-5-1406AH (1985),(Riyadh: College of Architecture and Planning, King Sauod University.**

**Al-Hussien, M., (1985),"Alternatives to Obtaine Privacy in Al-Swady Park, Riyadh, Saudi Arabia", A paper submitted to Symbosium of Urban and Environment, held in 29/5/1406 , in Colege of Architecture and Planning, King Saud University.**

**Al-Lyaly, S.,(1990),The Traditional House of Jeddah: A Study of the Interaction between Climate, Form, and Living Patterns, unpublished Ph.D Thesis, University of Edinburgh, p.11**

**Al-Madinah, daily newspaper, No 8712 Ramadan, 7 1411**

**Al-Mash'abi, O., (1987), "The Saudi Garden", (In Arabic: *Al-Hadigha Al-Saudiyyah*), in Al-Baladyyat, August 1987, No. 11, Third Year, pp. 62-70**

**Al-Mutawa, S. A., (1985), Kuwait City Parks, (London: KPI Limited).**

**Al-Nowaiser, M., (1985), "The Role of the Traditional and Modern Rural Settlements on the Quality of Environmental Experience in Saudi Arabia," in: Second Saudi Engineers Conference, King Fahd University for Petroleum & Minerals, Dahrn, Saudi Arabia.**

**Al-Olet, A., (1991), Cultural Issues as an Approach to Forming and Managing the Future Neighbourhoods, unpublished Ph.D Thesis, University of Strathclyde.**

**Al-Rahman, H., (1985), Review and Analysis of Land use Regulations in Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, unpublished Msc Thesis, UWIST, Cardiff.**

**Al-Sabahiyyah , A daily Newspaper, Friday, October, 4, 1991, p.10**

**Al-Sayyad, N. (1983), "Space in Islamic Cities", Unpublished paper submitted to the Symposium of Housing in the Islamic Countries, from 24 to 30 October, 1983**

**Al-Shahrani, M. (1992), An Inquiry into Leisure and Recreation Pattern and its Relationship to the Open Space and Landscape Design: The Case of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished PhD, University of Edinburgh. p.177**

**Al-Shareef, M.(1988), Urban Metamorphosis of Arab-Muslim Cities:With Particular reference to At-Taif City, Saudi Arabia, unpublished Ph.D. University of Wales, Cardiff.**

**Al-waddah, H. et. al (1980), "The Recreational Services in Al-Duha city" (In Arabic: *Al-Khadamat Al Tarawyhiyyah fe Madinat Al- Duhah*), in: Recreation in Arabic Cities, (The Arabic Institute for Cities Development Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, The General Presidency for Youth Welfare ) p. 327.**

**Albena, (1986), (*Arab Magazine for Architecture, const., Interior Design, Planning and Landscaping*), (Riyadh: Najd Press Co.), Vol.5,1986,No.27**

**Alfahim, A., (1989), The 200 Hadith, 3rd ed., (Makkah: Makkah Printing and Information Est. ), p. 36**

**Altman, I., and Zube, E., (1989), Public Places and Spaces, eds.,(New York: Plenum Press).**

**Appleyard, D. et al., (1981), Livable Streets, Protected Neighbourhoods, (Berkely: University of California Press).**

**Archea, J.C., (1984), "The Place of Architectural factors in Behavioral theories of Privacy", in: Journal of Social Issues, No.33, pp. 116-138**

**Ardener, S., (1981), Women and Space Ground Rules and Social Maps, ed., (London: Billing and Sons Limited)**

- Ashihara, Y., (1970), Exterior Design in Architecture, (London: Van Nostrand Reinhold Company).**
- Ashworth, G.,(1984), Recreation and Tourism, (London: Bell & Hyman Limited) p.184.**
- Bakader, A. et l., (1983), Islamic Principles for the Conservation of the National Environment, Methodology and Environmental Protection, (Jeddah: MEPA).**
- Bakor, S., (1985), " The Development of Recreational Services in City of Jeddah, in: The Recreational Services in City of Jeddah (In Arabic: Tattawor Alkhdamat Altarwiyyiah fi Madinat Jeddah), (Jeddah: KAAU University).**
- Barmham, P. et al. (1989), Leisure and Urban Process, eds, (London: Routledge).**
- Bechtel, R., and Zeisel, J., (1987), "Observation: The World Under A Glass", in: Methods in Environmental and Behavioural Research, Edited by Bechtel, R.,et al.,(New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Co. Inc.), p. 41-81**
- Beer, Anne. R., (1990), Environmental Planning for Site Development, (London: E.&F.N. Spon, An imprint of Chapman and Hall), pp.162-167**
- Blunden, J., and Curry, N., (1990) , A People's Charter ?, (London: Her Majesty Stationery Office (HMSO), pp. 23, 183 and 254.**
- Bokhary, A.Y (1980), Jeddah : A Study in Urban Formation, unpublished PhD Thesis, University of Pennsylvania.**
- British Travel Association, (1967) National Recreation Survey, Report No. 1, University of Keel, p.19**
- Brodav, M., (1968), Planning for People, (London: National Council for social service).**
- Burton, T., (1971), Experiments in Recreation Research (London: Alden & Mowbray Ltd), p.19**
- Butler, P. G. (1988), Employer-Sponsored Recreational Activities- Do The Costs Outweigh the Benefits, (Atlanta: Clark Paul Hoover & Mallard).**
- Campbell, A. (1981), The Sense of Well-Being in America: Recent Patterns and Trends, (New York: McGraw-Hill).**
- Canter, D. (1977), The Psychology of Place, (New York: ST. Martins Press).**
- Carls,E., (1974), "The Effects of People and Man-landused conditions on preferences for outdoor recreation landscapes, in: Journal of Leisure Research, National Recreation and Park Association), No. 6 (Spring), pp. 113-124**
- Central Department of Statistics (1962), qouted in: Jastaniah,O., (1984), TheUrban Functions of Jeddah - A Geographical Appraisal, unpublished Ph.D Thesis, University of Durham, p. 59.**
- Chenoweth, R., (1992), "Research: Hype and Reality", in: Landscape Architecture (Washington DC: Publication Board), Vol. 82, No. 3p. 47**
- Chermayeff, S. and Alexander, C. (1963), Community and Privacy, (New York: Anchor Books Doubleday & Company, Inc.)**
- Chermayeff, S., and Alexander, T., (1971), Shape of Community: Realization of Human Potential, (london: Penguin Books Inc.)**
- Chub, M., and Chubb, H., (1981), One Third of Our time : An Introduction to Recreation Behaviour and Resources, (New York: John Wiley & Sons, Inc.)**
- Clawson, M. and Knetsch, J., (1966), Economicof Outdoor Recreation, (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press), p.16**

- Clawson, M. et al, (1960), Land for the Future, (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, for Resources for the Future, Inc., ) Table 20, p. 136.**
- Coppock, J. T., (1975), Recreation in the Countryside, A spatial Analysis Focal Problems in Geography Series Published , (London: The Macmillian Press Ltd.), p.5**
- Cor Westland, (1985), "The development of national recreation policies", in Goodale,T.L, and Witt, P.A., eds. Recreation and Leisure: Issues in An Era of Change, (State College: Pennsylvania: Venture Publishing), p. 391-392**
- Cor Westland, (1985), "The development of national recreation policies", in T.L. Goodale and P.A. Witt (eds.) Recreation and Leisure: Issues in An Era of Change, (State College: Pennsylvania: Venture Publishing)**
- Corcoran, K. (1981), Saudi Arabia: Keys to Business Success, ed.(Berkshire: McGraw-Hill Book Company [UK] Limited)**
- Costa, F. and Noble.A., (1986), "Planning Arabic Town: Geographic Review", in: Albaladyyat, No. 10, Third Year, Shawwal 1407 (Jun. 1987), pp. 160-172.**
- Cranz, G., (1982), The Politics of Park Design: A History of Urban Parks in America, (USA: The MIT Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts), p.254**
- Cross, N. (1984), Development in Design Methodology, (New York: John Wiley & Sons).**
- de Vaus, D.A., (1986), Survey in Social Research - (Contemporary Social research Series II), (London: George Allen & Unwin (Publisher) Ltd.), p. 71**
- Deasy, C.(1974), Design for Human Affairs, (New York: John Wiley & Sons).**
- Digest of Countryside Recreation, (1976), Countryside Commission, October 1976, Table -12-.**
- Doshi, B. V. (1982), "Toward an Appropriate Living Environment: Questions on Islamic Development," in: The Aga Khan Award for Islamic Architecture, (Harvard and M.I.T. USA. p.135**
- Douglass, K. (1978), "Satisfactions", in: Journal of Leisure Research, Vol. 10, No. 4, pp.247-264**
- Douglass, R. (1982), Forest Recreation, 3rd ed., (New York: Pergamon Press).**
- Edward, F., (1990), "A Park For The Future", in: Landscape Architecture, Febuary, 1990, Vol. 80, No. 2, p. 35.**
- Eisner, G., (1975), The Urban Pattern, 3rd Edit., (New York: D. Van Nostrand Company), p. 285.**
- Elbing, A., (1970), Behavior Decision in Organization, (Glenview,Illinois Scott Foresman), p. 130.**
- Ellis, R., and Konrad, H., (1985), How To Succeed Written Work and Study: A handbook for students in all subjects in universities and colleges, (London: William Collins and Company Limited).**
- Evans, B. et al., (1982), Changing Design, (New York: John Willey & Sons).**
- Farsi, M., (1973) , Jeddah A Change Eco - System, (Supervisor), Municipality of Jeddah , research Department, Publication No. 4), p. 21.**
- Farsi, M., (n.d.), "Jeddah's Corniche" , in: Al-Fakahani, H., Jeddah: The Bride of the Red Sea Ed. (Cairo: The Arabian Publishing House for Encyclopaedias), p. 422**
- Farsi, Z. A., (1984), "Beautification of the Jeddah Corniche", in: Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs, Municipality of Jeddah, Training Seminar for Engineers : 13th to 15th February 1984, (Tudhoe: Mac Donald Press Ltd.) Centre for Middle Eastern and Islamic Studies, University of Durhamp.60**

- Farsi, Z. M., ( 1990), National Guide & Atlas of the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, (Jeddah: Printed by Al- Madinah Company), p. 57.**
- Field,D., et al., (1974), Water and Community Development, Social and Economic Perspectives, (Michigan: Ann Arbor Science Publication).**
- Filor, S. (1988), "Landscape Architecture in Saudi Arabia", Landscape Resrach, 13 (2), 1988, p. 27**
- Filor, S. (1991), "A Philosophy for Change", in: Landscape Design. (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute)p. 47**
- Filor, S., (1991), The Process of Landscape Design,(London: B.T. Batsford Ltd.)**
- Foster, J.,(1979), "Leisure Provision and Landscape Planning," in: Lovejoy,D., Land Use and Landscape Planning, ed. , 2nd edit., ( Glasgow: Leonard Hill), pp. 160-165.**
- Fourth Development Plan 1985-1990 , (1985), (Ministry of Planning: Kingdom of Saudi Arabia), p. 353**
- Francis, M. (1987), "Urban Open Spaces", in: Zube, E., and Moore, G., Behavioe and Design, (London: Plenum Press), Vol. 1.**
- Frank, Karen A. and Paxson, Lyny, (1989) " Women and Urban Public Space Research, Design, and Policy Issues", in: I.Altman , and E.Zube, Public Places and Spaces, eds., (New York: Plenum Press), pp 121-147.**
- Freedman, J. (1975), Crowding and Behavior, (New York: The Viking Press, Inc.).**
- Freeman. C., et al., (1972), Progress and Problems in Social Forecasting, (London: Social Science Research Centre).Pro**
- Freides, T., (1973), Literature and Bibliography of the Social Sciences, (Los Angles: Melville Publishing Company).**
- Friedmann, A. et al., (1978), Environmental Design Evaluation (New York: Plenum Press), p.9**
- Gallion, A., and Eisner, B., (1986), The Urban Pattern: City Planning and Design, 5th edit., (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Company), p. 309.**
- Gamdi, M. (1985), The Traditional Custom in The Village and The City: Albaha district and City of Jeddah, (In Arabic: *Altourath Al'-Sha'bi fi AlGaryyah wa'l Al-Madinah: Mantickat Al Baha - City of Jeddah*) (Jeddah: Dar Al-e'lm for Publishing and Printing)**
- Gans, H. (1986), People and Plans: Essays on Urban Problems and Solutions, (New York: Basic Books).**
- Garabet, L. (1982), Open Space Provision in Iraq, with special reference to Bagdad: An analysis of the factors influencing outdoor recreation activities as a basis for policy making, unpublished Ph.D thesis, university of Sheffield.**
- Gehl, J., (1987), Life Between Buildings: Using Public Spaces, (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold), pp.135-.140.**
- Germen, A. (1983), Islamic Architecture and Urbanism, edit. (Dammam: King Faisal University, Saudi Arabia).**
- Glyptis, S. (1989), "Recreational Deprivation: Urban and Rural Perspectives" In: Patmore, J.A., Recreation and Conservation Themes in AppliedGeography, (England: School of Geography & Earth , University of Hull), p.37**
- Gnanadesikan, R., (1977), Methods for Statistical Data Analysis of Multivariate Observations, (New York: John Wiley & Sons).**

- Godbey, G., (1978), Recreation, Park and Leisure Services, (Philadelphia: W.B. Saunders Co.)**
- Gold, S.M.,(1980), Recreation Planning and Design, (New York: McGraw-Hill BookCompany), p.152**
- Gorther, H., (1977), Administration in the Public Sector, (New York: John Wiley & Sons).**
- Hakim, B.S. (1986), Arabic-Islamic City, (London: KPI Ltd.) p.33**
- Hamdi, Y., (1985), "Plantation of Jeddah, the Pride of the Red Sea, (In Arabic: *Tash'jier Jeddah; Aroo's Al-Bahhr*) in: Mani, A. A Story of A City, ed., (In arabic: Gissat Madinah), ( Jeddah: Dar Al-Asfahani for Press).Vol. 1, p. 196.**
- Hammadi, T. (1989), "The Recreational Pattern of the Islamic person and its importance for planning and design of outdoor recreational provisions, in: Al-Talib, a quartely magazine issued by the Saudi Students' Clubs, concerning summaries of their academic work and theses, London, No.1, the 9th circule, Dcember 1989, pp.9-11.**
- Hammitt, W., (1987), Visual Recognition Capacity During Outdoor Recreation Experiences, (Tennessee: University of Tennessee, USA).**
- Hellevik, O., (1984), Introduction to Casual Analysis: Exploring Survey Data by Crosstabulation, (London: George Allen & Unwin).**
- Hendon, W.S., (1981), Evaluating Urban Parks and Recreation, (New York: Praeger Publishers), p.67**
- Heseltine, P., and Holborn, J., (1987), Playgrounds. The Planning, Design and Construction of Play Environments, (London: The Mitchell Publishing Comapny Limited). UK.**
- Hester, R., (1975), Neighbrhoud Spaces, (USA: Dowden, Hutchinson and Ross, Inc.)**
- Hiller, B. and Hanson, J. , (1984), The Social Logic of Space, (New York: Cambridge University Press**
- Hoel,P. (1984), Elementary Statistics, 4th Edit., (New York: John Wiley & Sons)**
- Hough, M. (1984), City Form and Natural Processes: Towards A New urban Vernacular, (London: Croom Helm).**
- Hultsman, John. et al. (1987), Planning Parks for People (London: E. & F.N. Spond. Ltd), p.310**
- Humble, R., (1990), "Forward into the '90s: The Fifth Five-Year Plan", in: Ahlan Wasahlan, Magazine, (Jeddah: Public Relations Division,Saudi Airlines), Vol. 13, No. 4 April 1990, p.12**
- Hutchison, R., (1987), Ethnicity and Urban Recreation - White, Blacks, and Hispanics in Chicagos public parks, (Wisconsin: University of Wisconsin, USA).**
- James, S.,(1986), Behavioural Research Techniques for Landscape Design, unpublished M.Phil. Thesis, University of Edinburgh.**
- Kandhalvi R.A., M, Zakariyya Kanhalvi, (N.D.) Tablighi Nisab : Stories of Sahabah Virtues of the Holy Qura'n. (In Urdu Book: *Hikayaat- e- Sahaba by Arshad, A. R.*), ( Dewsbury:Anjuman-E-Islahul Muslemeen of UK.), p. 16**
- Kane, E., (1984), Doing Your Own Research, (London: Marion Boyars).**
- Kaplan, R., and Kaplan, S., (1989), The Experience of Nature: A Psychological Perspective, (Cambridge: The Press of the University of Cambridge).**

- Kelly, J. (1983)**, "Social Benefits of Outdoor Recreation : An Introduction" , in: Lieber, S. and Fesenmaier, D. eds., Recreation Planning and Management, ( London: E & F.N. Spon Ltd.) p.3
- Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, (1982)**, Statistical Year book, Ministry of Finance and National Economy, Central Department of Statistics Eighteenth issue.
- Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, (N.D.)**, Achievements of the Development Plans 1970-1986 Facts & Figures, ,(Kingdom of Saudi Arabia: Ministry of Planning), p. 216.
- Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Ministry of Finance and National Economy, Central of Department Statistics,(1982)** Statistical Year book, Eighteenth issue.
- Kraus, R., and Curtis, J. (1986)**, Creative Management in Recreation, Parks and Leisure Services, 4th ed., (St. Louis: Times Mirror / Mosby College Publishing).
- Labovits, S., and Hagedoren, R., (1971)**, Intoduction to Social Research, 2nd edit. (USA: McGraw-Hill, Inc.)
- Lang, J., (1987)**, Creating Architectural Theory: The Role of the Behavioral Sciences in Environmental Design, (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Company).
- Lang, J., et al., (1974)**, Design for Human Behavior: Architecture and the Behavioral Sciences, (Stroudsburg: Dowden, Hutchinsion & Ross, Inc.)
- Lang, J., et al., (1984)**, Designing for Human Behavior, (Strobusburg: Dowden, Hutchinson & Ross).
- Lannon, J., (1982)**, Technical Writing, 2nd edit., (Canada: Little Brown & company Ltd).
- Lansing, J., et al., (1970)**, Planned Residential Environment, (Michigan: Survey Research Centre, Institute for Social Research, the Unversity of Michigan).
- Lansing, J.B., et al (1970)**, Planned Residential Environment, Report,(Michigan: Survey Research Centre, The Univ. of Michigan ), USA, p.90
- Laurent.D. et al.(1973)**, Engineering Geological Map of Leddah and Spot Information Map on Ground Conditions in Jeddah, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, (Jeddah: Geologic Map GM-8, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Ministry of Petroleum and Miniral Resources Directorate general of mineral resources).
- Laurie, M., (1975)**, An Intoduction to Landscape Architecture, (London: American Elservier: Publication Company Inc.)
- Lawso, F., and Baud-Bovy, M., (1977)**, Tourism and Recreation Development, (London: The architectural Press Ltd.).
- Lawson, F., and Baud-Bovy, M., (1977)**, Tourism and Recreation Development (Boston: CBI Publishing Company, Inc.)
- Lee, R., (1972)**, The social Definition of Outdoor Recreational Places in social behaviour, natural resources, and the environment, (New York: Harper & Row), pp. 68-84.
- Lee, K. (1990)**, Cross-Sociocultural Comparison of Aesthetic Attitudes to Gardenscape with special Reference to Chatsworth, England and Piwon, Korea, unpublished Ph.D. thesis, University of Sheffield. p.92
- Lipsky, G. A. (1959)** Saudi Arabia (New Haven: Harf Press).
- Lieber, S. and Fesenmaier, D, (1983)**, eds. , Recreation Planning and Management, (London: E. & F. N. Spon Ltd)
- Lutzin , S. G. and Storey, E.H.(1973)** Managing Municipal Leisure Services. (Chicago: The International City Managers Association)
- Lynch, K., (1981)**, A Theory of Good City Form, (Cambridge: The MIT Press).



- Lynch, K. (1971), Site Planning, 2nd ed., (Boston: The Massachusetts Institute of Technology).**
- MacGlobe v.1 (1991), Computer software for Macintosh, (Arizona: PC Globe, Inc.)**
- Magued, S. (1967), The Role of Water in Influencing the Form of Cities, unpublished Ph.D. Dissertation, university of Michigan.**
- Magued, S., (1987), "Waterfront recreation in Jeddah", in: Albenaa, Vol. 6, No.35, Ramadan-Shawal, 1407 (June-July 1987), p. 9**
- Mane', M. (1985), Jeddah: A Story of a City, (In Arabic: *Jeddah, Qissat Madinah*), (Jeddah: Dar Al-Asfahani for Press). p.116-168**
- Marcus, C.C., and Francis, C., (1990), People Places: Design Guidelines for Urban Open Spaces, (eds.) (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold).**
- Marsh, W. (1983), Landscape Planning: Environmental Application, (U.S.A.: Addison-Wesley Publishing Company), p.11**
- Marshall, L., (1983), Action by Design: Facilitating Design Decisions into the 21st Century, (Washington DC: American Society of Landscape architecture).**
- McKay, D., et al., (1983), Data Analysis and the Social Sciences, (London: Frances Printer (Publishers) Limited)**
- Mercer, D., (1980), In Pursuit of Leisure, (Australia: Sorrett Publishing Pty Lit.). p.33**
- Miles, C.W.N. and Seabrooke, W., (1977), Recreational - land Management, (London: E. & F.N. Spoon Limited).**
- Miller, T., (1992), "The ineffectual profession?", in: Landscape Design (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute), June 1992, No. 211, pp. 12-13**
- Ministry of Information, This is Our Country, (Riyadh: Saudi Desert House)**
- Moggridge, H. (1986), "The delights and problems of practice", in: E., Penning-Rowsell and D., Lowenthal, Landscape Meanings and Values, (London: Allen and Unwin), 105-110**
- Moser, C., and Kalton, G. (1971), Survey Methods in Social Investigation, (London: Heinemann Educational Ltd.).**
- Municipality of Jeddah, (n.d.), Jeddah Recreational facilities, (Jeddah: Sahar Printing Press),**
- Nahhas, M., (1986), An Analysis of the Need for Public Recreation Facilities in the City of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, unpublished Plan Paper Submitted to the Dept. of Recreation, Park and Leisure Studies, University of Minnesota, USA, p. 34**
- National Academy of Science, (1968), "A program for Outdoor Recreation Research, Report on a study Conference conducted June 2-8, 1968 by the National Academy of Science for the U.S. Department of the Interior Bureau of Outdoor Recreation, (Washington: D.C. National Academy of Sciences).p. 90**
- National tourism Development Plan, (1974), Master Plan and Feasibility Studies, Directorate General of Summer Resorts and Tourism, Baghdad, Volume 2, pp 89-91.**
- Natural History of Saudi Arabia: An Introduction (1992) Ministry of Agriculture and Water, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia (Riyadh: Obekan Comp. & Publishing Tel 01- 4983392)**
- Nawwab, I. et al (1981), Armco and Its World: Arabia and The Middle East, eds. (Dhahran: Arabian American Oil Company),. p. 239.**

- Objects of the Fifth Five Year Plan**, (1990), (Riyadh: Ministry of Planning).
- Okas**, the Daily newspaper, Arabic text, No. 9388, 11 April 1992, p.3
- Oppenheim, A., (1966)**, Questionnaire Design and Attitude Measurement, (London: Heinmann Educational Books Ltd.)
- Othman Llewellyn, (1983)**, "Shari'a - Values Pertaining to Landscape Planning and Design", In: Aydin Germen,, Islamic Architecture and Urbanism, ed., Selected Papers from A Symposium Organised by the College of Architecture and Planning, 5-10 January 1980 (Dammam: King Faisal University), p.31.
- Pastalan, Leon. A., (1987)**, "Privacy as an Expression of Human Territoriality", in: Kaplan, S., and Kaplan, R., Humanscape: Environments for People, (Michigan: Ulrich's Books, Inc.), p. 324.
- Patmore, J., (1989)**, Recreation and Conservation: Themes in Applied Geography, ed., (Hull: Miscellaneous Services No. 36, University of Hull). p.39.
- Patmore, J.A.,(1983)**, Recreation and Resources: Leisure Patterns and Leisure Places, (Oxford: Basil Blackwell Publisher Limited).
- Pesce, Angelo., (1976)**, Jeddah: Portrait of an Arabian City, (Italy: Grafiche Trevisan - Castelfranco Veneto). p.148
- Pigram, J., (1983)**, Outdoor Recreation and Resource Management, (New York: St, Martin's Press, Inc.)
- Pinkerton, J and Pinkerton, M., (1969)**, Outdoor Recreation and Leisure: A refernce Guide and Selected Bibliography (Columbia: Research Centre, School of Business and Public Administration, University of Missouri -Columbia, Columbia, Missouri)
- Proshansky, H., et al., (1970)**, Envoronmental Psychlogy: People and Their Physical Settings, eds., (London: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc).
- Qadhi, O.A., and Ibrahim, H. (1981)**, City Planning in Saudi Arabia, (In Arabic: Takhtiet Almudon fi Almamlakah Alarabiyyah Alsaudiyyah), (Riyadh: The Saudi Arabian Press Co.) p. 51-52
- Qattan, M., (1980)**, "Means of Recreation in Saudi Arabia , In Arabic" in: Recreation in Arabic Cities, (The Arabic Institute for Cities Development Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, The General Presidency for Youth Welfare ) , p.200.
- Qendeel, A., (n.d.)** Jeddah, The Sea Bride, (In Arabic: Jeddah Aroos Albahr), (Jeddah: Qendeel Commercial Est., two Volumes.
- Rapoport, A.(a) , ( 1977)**, Human Aspects of Urban Form, (Oxford: Pergamon Press), P.14
- Rapoport, A., (1969)**, House Form and Culture, (Englewood Cliffs: N.J. Prentice-Hall, Inc.).
- Rapport, A.(b) (1980)**, "Cross - cultural aspects of environment designs," in: Altman, et. al. , eds., Environment and culture, (New York: Plenum Press).
- Reader's Digest library of Modern Knowledge, (1987)**, (London: The reader's Digest Association Limited), p. 1000
- Relph, E., (1976)**, Place and Placeless Ness , ( London: Pion Limited ), p. 123.
- Ruddle, E., and Hamitt, W., (1987)**, Prospect Refuge Theory- A Psychological Orientation for Edge Effect in Recreation Environments, (Texas: Texas A&M University).

- Russell, R. (1987), The Importance of Recreation Satisfaction and Activity Participation to the Life Satisfaction of Age-Segregated Retirees, (Indiana: Indiana University). USA.**
- Rutledge, A., (1985), A Visual Approach to A Park Design, (New York: Garland STPM Press), p.26**
- Rutledge, A. (1971) Anatomy of a Park (New York: McGraw-Hill).**
- Rutledge, A. (1975), First National Bank Plaza, Chicago, Ill. A Pilot Study in Post Construction Evaluation. Urbana, Ill. (Illinois: University of Illinois), p. 64**
- Said, M. (1987), "Waterfront Recreation in Jeddah", in: Albenaa Magazine, Vol. 6. No. 35, June-July 1987, p. 9**
- Seeley, I.H. (1973) London Government Explained (London: Macmillan).**
- Serageldin, I. and El-Sadek, S., (1981), "Traditional Muslim Cities and Western Planning Ideology: An Outline of Structural Conflicts", in: The Arab City: Its Character and Islamic Cultural Heritage, (Medina: The Saidi Arabian Ministry of Municipal and Rural affairs, The Arab Urban Development Institute).**
- Sert Jackson International/Saudiconsult (hereafter SJI), (1980), Revision and Updating of the Existing Master Plan, Jeddah: Deputy Ministry of Town Planning, Tech. Report No. 9**
- Sideway, R., (1990), "Contemporary attitudes to landscape and implications for policy: a research agenda", in: Landscape Research, Summer 1990, Vol.15, No. 2.**
- Siegel, S. (1956), Nonparametric Statistics for the Behavioural Science, (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company), p. 175**
- Sillitoe, K., (1969), Planning for Leisure, Governmental social survey, Her Majesty's Stationery Office, London, p. 71**
- Simmons, I. (1975), Rural Recreation in the Industrial World, (London: Edward Arnold), p. 51**
- Simonds, J. (1983), Landscape Architecture: A manual of Site Planning and Design, (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company).**
- Sitte, c., (1979), The Art of Building Cities, (Trans. Stewart, C.T.) (New York: SJI, (1980), Jeddah Action Master Plan , Unpublished Report, Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs.**
- Smardon, R., et al., (1986), Foundations for Visual Project Analysis, (New York: John Wiley & Sons, Inc. USA), p.11**
- Smith, P. (1980), "The Islamic Environment in a British City - A Case study of Leicester", in: Eksics, Vol. 47, No. 280, Jan 1980, pp. 79-83.**
- Smith, S.L.J., (1983), Recreation Geography, (Essex: Longman Group Limited), p.122.**
- Stewart, D. (1976), Place and People ( Heinmann Educational Books), p.13**
- Sudman, S., (1976), Applied sampling, (London: Academic Press, Inc.)**
- The Kingdom of Saudi Arabia , (1986), 7th Edit. (London: Stacy International)**
- Thorn, R., and Robert, A., (1981), Sea Defence and Coast Protection Works: A Guide to Design, (London: Thomas Telford Ltd.)**
- Torkildsen, G., (1992), Leisure and Recreation Management, Third Edition (London: E & FN Spon, an imprint of Chapman & Hall), p.171**

- Travis, A. (1970),** Recreation Planning for the Clyde: Firth of Clyde Study Phase 2, Scottish Tourist Board, Proposal for the Development and Conservation of the Region's Recreation Resources, (Clyde Coast Publicity Committee Information Bureau, Glasgow). Director of the study was professor A.S. Travis.
- Turner, T., (1991),** "Pattern Analysis", in: Landscape Design (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute), October 1991, No. 204, p.40
- United Nations, (1985),** Human Rights: A compilation of International Instruments of the United Nations, United Nations, ( New York, MacMillan Publishing Co.), pp. 96-98
- US Bureau of Outdoor Recreation, (1975),** pp 10-22, In: Pigram, J.,(1983), Outdoor Recreation and Resources Management, (London: Croom Helm, ST. Martin's Press), p.16
- Van Doren, C., et al (1974),** Land and Leisure: Concepts and Methods in Outdoor Recreation, eds., 2nd edit., (USA: Marroufa Press, Inc.), p.19
- Von Grunebaum, G., (1969),** The Structure of the Muslim town's Islam: Essay in the Nature and Growth of Cultural Tradition, (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul Ltd.)
- Walker, T.D., (1987),** Design for Parks and Recreation Spaces , (Mesa, Arizona: PDA Publishers Corporation).
- Waller, E. (1988),** "The Diplomatic Quarter", in: Landscape Design, (London: Journal of the Landscape Institute), No. 174, August 1988, p.49
- Waller, E., (1985),** Landscape Planning in Saudi Arabia, College of Engineering, K.A.A.U., Project No. 05-410. Jeddah, Saudi Arabia.
- Watson, G., and Dickinson, M.(1980),** Statistical Inquiry, ((New York: John Wiley & Sons, Inc.)
- Zeisel, John , (1981),** Inquiry by Design: Tools for Environmental-Behavior Research, (Bemont: Wadsworth, Inc). USA.
- Zhang, W.B., (1980),** The pattern-formation of an urban system, (Sweden: Umea University)

# **LIST OF APPENDICES**

# **Appendix A**

## **Questionnaire's tabulation**

**QUESTIONNAIRE'S  
TABULATION**

Sample size 275

Period of survey conducted May-June 1989.

Study Area : Jeddah's Corniche, Jeddah, Saudi Arabia

**FIRST PART**

**FIRST PART: Background and personal detail of respondents**

1	NATIONALITY	Count:	Percent:
1	Saudi	214	78%
2	Arabic country	49	18%
3	Non-Islamic country	3	3%
4	Islamic country	4	2%

2	place of residency	Count:	Percent:
1	from city of Jeddah	227	83%
2	Outside city of Jeddah	45	16%
3	Outside the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia	2	1%
Total		274	100%

3	Occupation	Count:	Percent:
1	Educational (teacher, lecturer, etc.	37	14%
2	Civic	62	23%
3	Military	24	9%
4	Private sector	21	8%
5	Self-employed	16	6%
6	Housewife & employed...	17	6%
7	Housewife only	11	4%
8	Retired	1	1%
9	Student	84	31%
10	Unemployed	0	0%
11	Housewife and studying (i.e. married student)	1	1%
Total		274	100%

4	Dwelling	Count:	Percent:
1	with Family	243	89%
2	Alone	8	3%
3	With friends	6	2%
4	Multifamily (father and grandfather)	11	4%
5	with relatives	3	2%
6	Student accommodation	1	1%
	Military accommodation	2	1%
Total		274	100%

5	Sex	Count:	Percent:
1	Male	186	68%
2	Female	87	32%

6	Religion	Count:	Percent:
1	Moslem	266	97%
2	Non-Moslem	8	3%

7	Marital status	Count:	Percent:
1	Single	101	37%
2	Married	168	61%
3	Divorced/widowed	5	2%
Total		274	100%

8	Age of respondent	Count:	Percent:
1	Less than 25 years old	106	39%
2	From 26 to 35 years old	105	38%
3	From 36 to 45 years old	41	15%
4	From 46 to 55 years old	19	7%
5	From 56 to 65 years old	2	1%
6	More than 65 years old	1	1%
Total		274	100%

9	The head of the family	Count:	Percent:
1	Father	245	90%
2	Grandfather	6	2%
3	Daughter	0	0%
4	Mother	1	1%
5	Son	19	7%
6	Other	2	1%
Total		274	100%

10	The respondent's educational level	Count:	Percent:
1	Uneducated	4	2%
2	Read only	2	1%
3	Read and write	12	4%
4	Elementary certificate.	24	9%
5	Intermediate certificate	37	14%
6	Secondary cert.	72	26%
7	Intermediate College	6	2%
8	University cert.	91	34%
9	Post graduate	21	8%
10	Other	3	1%
Total		272	100%

**11** Ages, sexes and recreational activities were practiced by the family

Age	Children		N	Missing	%	Activities
	Sex	No				
Less than 5 years	M	156	251	24	62	Toys
	F	154	251	24	61	
from 6-15 years	M	190	251	24	75	Watching TV, Video games, swings and toddlers games
	F	150	251	24	59	
from 16-25 years	M	149	249	26	59	Playing football, cards, . Watching TV, driving etc.
	F	168	250	25	67	
from 26-40	M	71	250	25	28	playing football, cards, Watching TV and driving for pleasure etc.
	F	67	249	26	26	
from 41-65	M	39	251	24	15	Walking, visiting relatives and friends, and driving for pleasure, etc.
	F	36	245	30	14	
More than 65 years	M	15	250	25	6	Sitting, Watching TV, etc.
	F	5	239	36	2	



<b>12</b>	<b>Monthly income in Saudi Riyals</b>	<b>Count:</b>	<b>Percent:</b>
1	Less than 2000 SR	33	12%
2	From 2001-4000	64	24%
3	From 4001-8000	96	36%
4	From 8001-12000	24	9%
5	More than 1200...	10	4%
6	No income	43	16%
<b>Total</b>		<b>270</b>	<b>100%</b>

<b>13</b>	<b>Transportation used for recreation</b>	<b>Count:</b>	<b>Percent:</b>
1	Private car	234	85%
2	With friend or relative	39	14%
3	Public transportation	1	1%
<b>Total</b>		<b>274</b>	<b>100%</b>

<b>14</b>	<b>Number of cars used for recreation</b>	<b>Count:</b>	<b>Percent:</b>
1	one car	189	69%
2	Two cars	78	28%
3	Three cars	6	2%
4	More than four cars	1	1%
<b>Total</b>		<b>274</b>	<b>100%</b>

<b>15</b>	<b>Number of cars used for personal and family transportation</b>	<b>Count:</b>	<b>Percent:</b>
1	one car	190	69%
2	Two cars	45	16%
3	Three cars	33	12%
4	More than four cars	6	1%
<b>Total</b>		<b>274</b>	<b>100%</b>

<b>16</b>	<b>Which of the following exists in your house</b>	<b>Count:</b>	<b>Percent:</b>
1	Television	264	98%
2	Video	200	74%
3	Private library	191	71%
4	Recreational games	139	52
5	Video games	136	51%
6	Female servant	108	40%
7	Courtyard	74	28%
8	Mosque	54	20%
9	Night recreational place	51	19%
10	Private garden	50	19%
11	Patio	43	16%
12	Livestock place	37	14%
13	Baby-sitter	13	5%
14	Swimming pool	10	4%

<b>17</b>	<b>Type of residential unit</b>	<b>Count:</b>	<b>Percent:</b>
1	Palace	2	1%
2	Villa for more than one family	15	6%
3	Villa	72	26%
4	Traditional house	33	12%
5	Flat	151	55%
6	Other	0	0%

18	Residential ownership	Count:	Percent:
1	own	133	49%
2	rented	119	44%
3	government's houses	21	8%
4	Other	10	55%
Total		273	100%

## S E C O N D P A R T

### LOCALITY AND SURROUNDING NEIGHBOURHOOD ALTERNATIVE OPEN SPACES

1	How long have you been in Jeddah (Number of years) ?	Count:	Percent:
1	Less than 5 years	75	32%
2	from 6 to 10	35	14%
3	from 11 to 15	26	11%
4	from 16 to 20	29	12%
5	from 21 to 25	28	12%
6	from 26 to 30	23	10%
7	from 31 to 35	14	6%
8	from 36 to 40	3	1%
9	from 41 to 45	2	1%
10	More than 50 years	1	0%
Total		234	100%

Missing: 41

### 2 How would you describe the recreational area next to your home?

Respondent's description	Excllent		Go od		Bad		Very bad		Do not		Mode
	count	%	count	%	count	%	count	%	count	%	
General conditions	54	23	117	49	42	18	12	5	11	5	Good
Means of approach by feet	23	11	79	38	43	21	33	16	31	15	Good
Pedestrian movement around the site	22	11	94	46	44	21	20	10	26	13	Good
Means of approach by cars	69	33	93	45	22	11	14	7	10	5	Good
Traffic circulation	34	17	93	46	55	27	21	10	0	0	Good
<b>PRIVACY FOR WOMEN</b>	12	6	35	17	48	23	90	43	23	11	Very bad
The site as a social encouragement and playing with others	14	7	62	30	49	24	46	22	35	17	Good
The correspondence to climatic factors	7	4	67	34	60	30	31	16	32	16	Good
Children safety	20	9	80	38	50	24	48	23	14	7	Good

### 3 For whom would you give priority in designing outdoor recreational areas ?

No.	Respondent's choice	Count:	Percent:
1	Men and children	34	13%
2	Women and children	98	37%
3	Handicapped and children	68	26%
4	Women and Handicapped	12	5%
5	Men and handicapped	5	2%
6	Men only	13	5%
7	All the family	33	12%
8	Children and Handicapped	3	1%
Total		266	100%

## FINAL PART

### RECREATIONAL ACTIVITIES, SERVICES AND THE DESIGN OF JEDDAH'S CORNICHE

1 What are the factors that encouraged you to spend your leisure time in the Corniche ? (Please select the most important five factors you think of).

No	The stimulating factors	Count:	Percent:
1	To see the sea and the natural views	247	91%
2	Because of children (public and private amusement parks)	140	52%
3	No adequate nearby open space	137	51%
4	It is the only available space	127	47%
5	Give a chance for women to spend their leisure time	121	45%
6	Open spaces for children and family	96	36%
7	For driving for pleasure around different areas of the Corniche park	94	35%
8	The general beauty of the recreational area	94	35%
9	Adjacent to mosque	29	35%
10	The general public seating places	68	25%
11	Ease of access	63	23%
12	No choice	46	17%
13	Sea games (Swimming, fishing, boating, skiing, etc.)	39	15%
14	Faraway from others	12	13%
15	Other things	2	2%

2 I would like to know about your satisfaction with regard to family privacy while they are participating in recreational activities and sitting on the Corniche pavements ? Is it :

No.	Variables	Count:	Percent:
1	Too little	182	66%
2	About the right	71	26%
3	Too much	5	2%
4	Do not know	16	6%
Total		274	100%

Number of missing: 1

3 Can you think of any reason that may prevent your family from using the Corniche for active recreational activities ?

Yes	237	87%
-----	-----	-----

4 If your answer to question No. 3 is "YES" can you please tick the most important three reasons you think of ?

No	Variables of reasons	Count:	Percent:
1	Bothering adults (bachelor-males) who pass by or during participation in recreational pursuits	211	89%
2	For religious reasons, because the family is not allowed, or prefers not to practice in recreational activities in exposed areas (lack of privacy)	208	87%
3	Too close a distance between sitting areas, and lack of visual screen to preserves privacy for ladies	142	60%
4	Proximity of traffic flow and pedestrian movements to outdoor recreational sites	133	56%
5	Too crowded	47	49%
6	Due to lack of sufficient maintenance to existing recreational facilities	39	16%

**5** The following elements are very important in planning and designing recreational open spaces in the Corniche area. Please tick the most important five elements you would like to see provided in developing leisure provision.

N0	Respondent's required elements	Count:	Percent:
1	Shaded and green open spaces	191	71%
2	Prevent bachelors from driving within family areas or mixed with their sites	176	65%
3	Complete and adequate degree of privacy for women	152	56%
4	Open spaces or new gardens designed specially for Saudi way of life	52	56%
5	Children play spaces	136	50%
6	Toilets	126	47%
7	Mosques or open spaces to pray in due time within 10 minutes walk	109	40%
8	Ease of finding car park adjacent or near the recreational sites	97	36%
9	Regulate or prevent sales men from recreational areas	64	24%
10	Provide the means of satisfying visitors regards to space/safety feeling	63	23%
11	Ease of approach and suitability of location	48	18%
12	Providing adequate recreational facilities that suit each member of the family	44	16%
13	Regulating and controlling the use of outdoor recreational spaces	32	12%
14	Light shopping centres	25	9%

**6** How did you assess the following aspects in affecting your satisfaction in terms of general layout of landscape physical settings?

N O	Respondent's assessment	V.Satisfied		Satisfied		Indifferent		Dissatisfied		V.dissatisfied	
		Count	%	Count	%	Count	%	Count	%	Count	%
A	Privacy from other adjacent recreational sites	9	3	42	16	30	11	84	31	103	38
B	Privacy from passers-by	7	3	18	7	30	11	89	33	126	47
C	Views to next areas	121	44	114	41	14	5	11	4	13	5
D	Size of the recreational site	19	7	62	23	23	9	96	36	67	25
E	Safety and security (for children/women) from pedestrian and traffic flow	25	9	77	28	17	6	74	27	80	29

**7** While you are in the Corniche site, how do you find noise ?

No.	Variables	Count:	Percent:
1	Minor problem	159	58%
2	Great problem	71	27%
3	No problem	42	15%
Total		274	100%

missing: 2

**8 Why did you choice this part of the Corniche in particular?  
Please tick the main three reasons you think of.**

No	Reasons of selecting a site	Count	Percent:
1	It is adjacent to the sea edge	197	72%
2	Suitable for children	112	41%
3	Suitable for family	105	38%
4	It was vacant during seeking for recreational place	101	37%
5	Its proximity to public and private amusement parks	79	29%
6	Very attractive	72	26%
7	It is faraway from pedestrian and traffic movements	53	20%
8	Ample open spaces	36	13%
9	Other reasons	15	6%

**9 What kind of outdoor recreational opportunities would you most like to be provided in the Corniche recreational areas? (please tick the most important three):**

No	Variables	Male	Female	Total	DF.	Chi-Square	P.
1	Separation between men and women areas for the sake of privacy for ladies	66%	71%	68%	1	0.574	0.447
2	Relaxation places with shade trees and general facilities	64%	66%	64%	1	0.186	0.667
3	Specially designed chalets for families and for male-bachelors	56%	67%	59%	1	3.325	0.682
4	Need sea-games (boating, aquarium, etc.	45%	44%	45%	1	0.035	0.851
5	More recreational services (leisure centres on the sea e.g. pears)	33%	23%	30%	1	2.733	0.098
6	Other things are needed	12%	6%	10%	1	2.412	0.1204

**RESPONDENTS' CATEGORISATION OF THEIR PRIVACY LEVEL FOR THEIR FAMILY(S) (LADIES) WHILE THEY ARE SITTING ON THE PAVEMENT OF THE CORNICHE AREA**

**10 While you are in Jeddah's Corniche, how would you categorise your family's (ladies') privacy level while they are sitting on the sidewalk of the Corniche areas. Is it:**

	Too little	About right	Too much	Do not know
<b>Male</b> n = 181	n=113 <b>62%</b>	n=31 17%	n=9 5%	n=28 15%
<b>Female</b> n = 86	n=59 <b>69%</b>	n=7 8%	n=5 6%	n=15 17%
<b>Total</b> N = 267	n=172 <b>64%</b>	n=38 14%	n=14 5%	n=43 16%

DF: 3 Total Chi-Square: 3.873 p = .2755

**11 Please indicate the approximate time you spend in Jeddah's Corniche for outdoor recreational pursuits**

	Less than an hour	From 1 to 2 hours	From 3 to 4 hours	From 5 to 6 hours	More than 6 hours	The whole day	The whole weekend
<b>Male</b> n = 185	n=9 5%	n=82 44%	n=71 38%	n=9 5%	n=4 2%	n=8 4%	n=2 1%
<b>Female</b> = 87	n=7 8%	n=34 39%	n=32 37%	n=10 12%	n=3 4%	n=1 1%	n=0 0%
<b>Totals:</b> N= 272	n=16 6%	n=116 43%	n=103 38%	n=19 7%	n=7 3%	n=9 3%	n=2 1%

DF: 6 Total Chi-Square: 8.286 p = .2179

**12 On which day (s) of the week do you prefer to spend your leisure time**

	Sat	Sun	Monday	Holi- days	Wed and Thur	Thur	Fri	Fri and Thur
<b>Male</b> n = 84	n=2 1%	n=1 1%	n=4 2%	n=20 11%	n=9 5%	n=52 28%	n=35 19%	n=61 33%
<b>Female</b> n = 85	n=1 1%	n=2 2%	n=1 1%	n=15 18%	n=7 8%	n=30 35%	n=12 14%	n=17 20%
<b>Totals</b> N= 269	n=3 1%	n=3 1%	n=5 2%	n=35 13%	n=16 6%	n=82 31%	n=47 17%	n=78 29%

DF: 7 Total Chi-Square: 10.38 p = .168

**13 Please indicate the most important factors that cause you to leave the outdoor recreational site.**

No.	Respondent's reasons to leave the outdoor recreational site	Men	Women	Total	DR.	Chi-Square	P.
1	Too much anxiety from other visitors (bachelor-males)	n=88 49%	n=53 62%	N=141 53%	1	4.03	0.045
2	End of leisure time	n=109 59%	n=16 19%	N=125 46%	1	38.922	0.0001
3	Privacy intrusion from other groups	n=76 43%	n=42 50%	N=118 45%	1	1.315	0.252
4	Too many visitors (high density - crowded)	n=70 39%	n=48 56%	N=118 45%	1	7.03	0.008
5	Feeling of boredom, routine and monotony	n=53 29%	n=36 42%	N=89 34%	1	4.03	0.0447
6	To find a better place	n=53 30%	n=32 39%	N=85 33%	1	1.926	0.1652
7	To drive around different recreational sites (pleasure driving)	n=44 25%	n=32 39%	N=76 30%	1	4.912	0.0267
8	Other reasons	n=24 16%	n=12 17%	N=36 17%	2	.494	.7813

**14 Are there any means you can think of that may give hand in developing and enhancing the sea-side Corniche areas and other outdoor recreational open spaces?**

	Spaces for families on the beach ...	Natural sand beaches (no artificial man-made)
Male n=80	55 69%	25 31%
Female n=43	35 81%	8 19%
Totals: N=123	90 73%	33 27%

DF: 1 Total Chi-Square: .907 p = .341

	Yachting...	Information centres...
Male n=36	12 33%	24 67%
Female n=15	3 20%	12 80%
Totals: N=51	15 29%	36 71%

Df: 1 Total chi-square: 2.278 P = .1312

	Public awareness	Adequate spaces
Male n=30	13 43%	17 57%
Female n=13	7 54%	6 46%
Totals: N=43	20 47%	23 53%

DF:1 Total Chi-Square: .403 p = .5256

	Fine for throwing rubbish	Educate people by TV and the media
Male n=25	14 56%	11 44%
Female n=11	6 56%	5 46%
Totals: N=36	20 56%	16 44%

DF: 1 Total Chi-Square: .007 p = .9355

	Active recreational areas for use of ladies only	Car parks	Means of providing adequate and sufficient safety	Sports centres for women	Privacy for women
Male n=24	13 54%	7 29%	2 8%	0 0%	2 8%
Female n=7	4 57%	2 29%	0 0%	1 14%	0 0%
Totals: N=31	17 55%	9 29%	2 6%	1 3%	2 7%

DF:4 Total Chi-Square: 4.605 p = .3303

**T h a n k   y o u .**

For more respondents' comments see chapter 10

# **Appendix B**

## **The English Questionnaire Format**



## THE QUESTIONNAIRE FORMAT

Symbol number (.....)

Name of the Place:.....

Date: / /19

Time:

### FIRST PART GENERAL INFORMATION

#### 1- Nationality

- 1.  From Arabic country
- 2.  From a foreign country
- 3.  From Islamic country

#### 2- Place of residency

- 1.  Jeddah
- 2.  Outside of Jeddah
- 3.  Outside of Saudi Arabia.

#### 3- Occupation

- 1.  Educational
- 2.  Civilian.
- 3.  Military
- 4.  Private employee.
- 5.  Self-employed
- 6.  Housewife and employed
- 7.  Housewife only
- 8.  Retired
- 9.  Student
- 10.  Jobless

#### 4- Dwelling with

- 1.  My your family
- 2.  Alone
- 3.  With friends
- 4.  Multiple family (father and grandfather)
- 5.  With Relatives
- 6.  Other. ...Please specify.....

#### 5- Sex

- 1.  Male
- 2.  Female

#### 6- Religion

- 1.  Moslem
- 2.  Non-Moslem

#### 7- Marital status

- 1.  Single
- 2.  Married
- 3.  Divorced / Widowed

#### 8- Age in years

- 1.  25 and lower
- 2.  26 - 35
- 3.  36 - 45
- 4.  46 - 55
- 5.  56 - 65
- 6.  65 and over

#### 9- The head of the family

- 1.  Father
- 2.  Grandfather
- 3.  Daughter.
- 4.  Mother
- 5.  Son
- 6.  Other.....Please, specify.....

#### 10- The educational level

- 1.  Uneducated
- 2.  Read and write
- 3.  Elementary certificate
- 4.  Intermediate certificate
- 5.  Secondary certificate
- 6.  Intermediate college
- 7.  University degree
- 8.  Postgraduate degree
- 9.  Other Please, specify

**11. Ages, sexes and recreational activities practiced by the family members of your household:**

Age	No	Sex	Type of recreational activities
Less than 5 Years		Male	
		Female	
from 6-15 years		Male	
		Female	
from 16-25 years		Male	
		Female	
from 26-40 years		Male	
		Female	
from 41-65 years		Male	
		Female	
More than 65 years		Male	
		Female	

**12 - Monthly income (in Saudi Riyals(one pound = 6.5. approx.)**

1.  Less than-2000 SR..
2.  From 2001- 4000 SR.
3.  From 4001 - 8000 SR.
4.  From 8000-12000 SR.
5.  More than 12000 SR.
6.  I do not have an income

**13 - How do you reach the places which you visit for recreation usually?**

1.  With your private car
2.  By public transportation (taxi, bus, limousine).
3.  With a friend or relative car
4.  other than that... please Specify.

14- Number of cars used for recreational trips.....

15- Number of cars used for personal and family use.

**16- Which of the following exist in your house**

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. <input type="radio"/> Home library                                | 8. <input type="radio"/> Servant / maidservant               |
| 2. <input type="radio"/> Small mosque                                | 9. <input type="radio"/> Patio                               |
| 3. <input type="radio"/> Television                                  | 10. <input type="radio"/> Livestock place                    |
| 4. <input type="radio"/> Video                                       | 11. <input type="radio"/> Special place for night recreation |
| 5. <input type="radio"/> Video gages (Atari)                         | 12. <input type="radio"/> Private courtyard                  |
| 6. <input type="radio"/> Recreational games<br>(cards, domino, etc.) | 13. <input type="radio"/> Swimming pool                      |
| 7. <input type="radio"/> Baby-sitter                                 |  |

**17- TYPE OF RESIDENTIAL UNIT**

- 1.  Palace
- 2.  Villa for more one family
- 3.  Villa
- 4.  Traditional house
- 5.  Flat
- 6.  Other...Please specify....

**18 - RESIDENTIAL OWNERSHIP**

- 1.  Rented
- 2.  Government provided
- 3.  Own
- 4.  Other.....Please specify....

**SECOND PART**  
**LOCALITY AND SURROUNDING NEIGHBOURHOOD**  
**ALTERNATIVE OPEN SPACES**

1. How long have you been in Jeddah? ..

2. How you describe the recreational open spaces next to your home ? (If any)

OPEN SPACE FEATURES	Excellent	Good	Bad	Very Bad	Do not know
General conditions					
Means of approach by feet					
Pedestrian movement around the site					
Means of approach by cars					
Traffic circulation					
<b>PRIVACY FOR WOMEN</b>					
The site as a social encouragement and playing with others					
The correspondence to climatic factors					
Children safety					

3- For whom would you give priority in designing outdoor recreational areas ?

- 1.  men and children
- 2.  women and Children
- 3.  handicapped & children
- 4.  women & handicapped
- 5.  men & handicapped
- 6.  men only
- 7.  all the family
- 8.  children& handicapped

**17- TYPE OF RESIDENTIAL UNIT**

- 1.  Palace
- 2.  Villa for more one family
- 3.  Villa
- 4.  Traditional house
- 5.  Flat
- 6.  Other...Please specify....

**18 - RESIDENTIAL OWNERSHIP**

- 1.  Rented
- 2.  Government provided
- 3.  Own
- 4.  Other.....Please specify....

**SECOND PART**  
**LOCALITY AND SURROUNDING NEIGHBOURHOOD**  
**ALTERNATIVE OPEN SPACES**

1. How long have you been in Jeddah? ..

2. How you describe the recreational open spaces next to your home ? (If any)

OPEN SPACE FEATURES	Excellent	Good	Bad	Very Bad	Do not know
General conditions					
Means of approach by feet					
Pedestrian movement around the site					
Means of approach by cars					
Traffic circulation					
<b>PRIVACY FOR WOMEN</b>					
The site as a social encouragement and playing with others					
The correspondence to climatic factors					
Children safety					

3- For whom would you give priority in designing outdoor recreational areas ?

- 1.  men and children
- 2.  women and Children
- 3.  handicapped & children
- 4.  women & handicapped
- 5.  men & handicapped
- 6.  men only
- 7.  all the family
- 8.  children& handicapped

**THIRD PART**

**RECREATIONAL ACTIVITIES, SERVICES AND THE DESIGN OF JEDDAH'S CORNICHE**

**1 What are the factors that encouraged you to spend your leisure time in the Corniche ? (Please select the most important five factors)**

01 <input type="checkbox"/>	To see the sea and the natural views
02 <input type="checkbox"/>	Because of children (public and private amusement parks)
03 <input type="checkbox"/>	No adequate nearby open space
04 <input type="checkbox"/>	It is the only available space
05 <input type="checkbox"/>	Give a chance for women to spend their leisure time
06 <input type="checkbox"/>	Open spaces for children and family
07 <input type="checkbox"/>	For driving for pleasure around different areas of the Corniche park
08 <input type="checkbox"/>	The general beauty of the recreational area
09 <input type="checkbox"/>	Adjacent to mosque
10 <input type="checkbox"/>	The general public seating places
11 <input type="checkbox"/>	Ease of access
12 <input type="checkbox"/>	No choice
13 <input type="checkbox"/>	Sea games (Swimming, fishing, boating, skiing, etc.)
14 <input type="checkbox"/>	Faraway from others
15 <input type="checkbox"/>	Other things

**2. RESPONDENT'S SATISFACTION IN RELATION TO FAMILY PRIVACY IN CORNICHE SITES**

1.  Too little                      3.  To much  
 2.  About the right            4.  Do not know

**3. CAN YOU THINK OF ANY REASON(S) THAT MAY PREVENT FAMILY(S) (LADIES) FROM USING OUTDOOR RECREATIONAL SITES ?**

1.  Yes    2.  No

**4. If your answer to question 3 is "YES" , can you please tick the most important three reasons**

1.  Religious reasons, because the family is not allowed, or prefer not to practice in recreational activities in exposed areas (lack of privacy)  
 2.  Bothering of adults (bachelor-males) who pass-by or during participation in outdoor recreational pursuits.  
 3.  Due to lack of sufficient maintenance to the outdoor recreational facilities  
 4.  Too close a distance between sitting areas/ lack of visual screen to preserve privacy for ladies  
 5.  The proximity of traffic flow and pedestrian movements to outdoor recreational sites  
 6.  Others. Please, specify.....

## **MOST IMPORTANT ELEMENTS TO BE DEVELOPED IN THE LEISURE SITE**

**5. The following elements are very important in designing and planning outdoor recreational provision. Please tick the most important five elements that you would like to be provided in this leisure areas.**

1.  Shaded areas and green open spaces
2.  Open spaces or new gardens and outdoor recreational provisions especially planned and designed to suit families (ladies)
3.  Children's play areas
4.  Ease of approach to the site and suitability of location
5.  Ease of finding car parking adjacent/near sites
6.  Complete privacy for families, especially for ladies within the site
7.  Prevent single men from driving within recreational spaces
8.  Prevent or regulate sale's from Corniche sites
9.  Regulate the use of recreational areas
10.  Recreational facilities for different ages of the family members
11.  Peace, safety and security for women and children
12.  Light shopping centres
13.  Mosques or places to perform and pray at due time
14.  Toilets
15.  Any other things ....Please, specify.....

## **PRIVACY ASSESSMENT AND SATISFACTION OF RESPONDENTS IN TERMS OF GENERAL LAYOUT OF THE EXISTING PHYSICAL LANDSCAPE SETTINGS?**

**6. How do you assess the following aspects in affecting your satisfaction in terms of general layout, function and space arrangements of the spatial and physical settings?**

**A- Privacy satisfaction for women (privacy from other adjacent recreational sites). Are you:**

1.  Very satisfied
2.  Satisfied
3.  Indifferent
4.  Dissatisfied
5.  Very dissatisfied

**B- Views to next areas**

1.  Very satisfied
2.  Satisfied
3.  Indifferent
4.  Dissatisfied
5.  Very dissatisfied

**C. Privacy from passer by are you:**

1.  Very satisfied
2.  Satisfied
3.  Indifferent
4.  Dissatisfied
5.  Very dissatisfied

**D. Size of the outdoor recreational site. Are you:**

1.  Very satisfied
2.  Satisfied
3.  Indifferent
4.  Dissatisfied
5.  Very dissatisfied

**E. Safety and security of your women and children from pedestrian and traffic flow. Are you:**

- 1.  Very satisfied
- 2.  Satisfied
- 3.  Indifferent
- 4.  Dissatisfied
- 5.  Very dissatisfied

**7. While you are in this site, how do you feel about noise?**

- 1.  Great problem
- 2.  Minor problem
- 3.  No problem

**8. Why did you choose this site in particular?**

- 1.  Very attractive
- 2.  Suitable for children
- 3.  It was vacant during seeking for outdoor recreational place
- 4.  Because it is adjacent to the sea coast ( sea-line )
- 5.  It is close to private or public amusements (leisure places
- 6.  Suitable to families
- 7.  Ample open spaces
- 8.  Because it is faraway from pedestrian and traffic circulation
- 9.  Other reasons. Please, specify.....

**9. What kind of outdoor recreational opportunities would you most like to be provided?**

**( Please tick the most important three )**

- 1.  Sea activity games (boats, aquarium , etc. .)
- 2.  Relaxation places with shade trees and general facilities
- 3.  Separation between men and women areas for the sake of privacy for ladies
- 4.  More recreational services
- 5.  Specially designed chalets for families and for male-bachelors.
- 6.  Other things that are needed?

**RESPONDENTS' CATEGORISATION OF THEIR PRIVACY LEVEL FOR THEIR FAMILY(S) (LADIES )WHILE THEY ARE SITTING ON THE PAVEMENT OF THE CORNICHE AREA**

**10. While you are in Jeddah's Corniche, how would you categorise your family's (ladies') privacy level while they are sitting on the sidewalk of the Corniche areas. Is it:**

- 1.  Too little
- 2.  About right
- 3.  Too much (cut off)
- 4.  Do not know

**11. Please indicate the approximate time you spend in Jeddah's Corniche for outdoor recreational pursuits**

- 1.  Less than an hour
- 2.  From 1 to 2 hours
- 3.  From 3 to 4 hours
- 4.  From 5 to 6 hours
- 5.  More than 6 hours
- 6.  The whole day

**12. In which day (s) of the week; you prefer to spend your leisure time**

- 1.  Sat
- 2.  Sun
- 3.  Monday
- 4.  Holidays
- 5.  Wed. and Thursday
- 6.  Thursday and Friday
- 7.  Friday and Thursday

**13. Please indicate the most important factors that cause you to leave the outdoor recreational site**

- 1.  End of leisure time
- 2.  Feelings of boredom, routine and monotony
- 3.  Too much anxiety from other visitors (bachelor-males)
- 4.  Too many visitors ( high density- crowded)
- 5.  Privacy intrusion from other groups
- 6.  To find a better place
- 7.  To drive around different recreational sites

**14- Are there any means you can think of that may give a hand in developing and enhancing the sea-side Corniche areas and other outdoor recreational openspaces?**

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

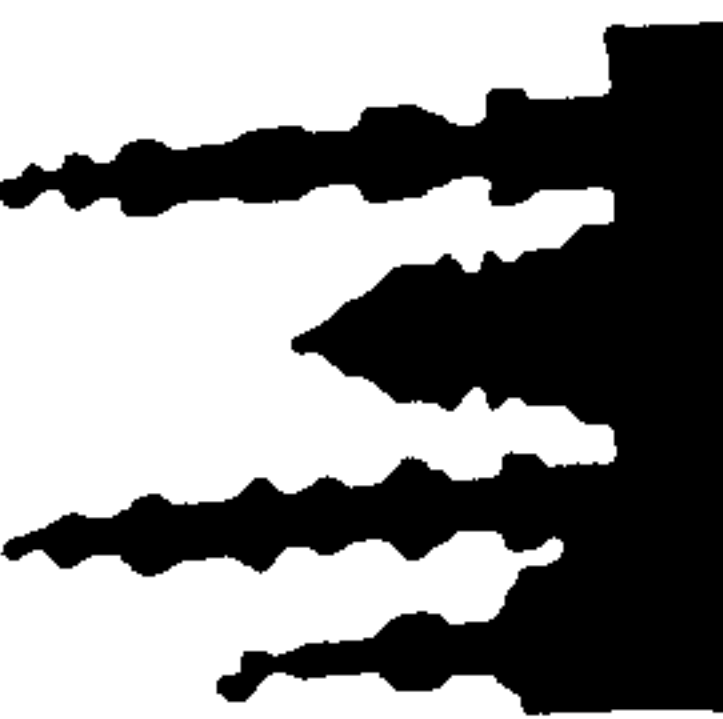
**T h a n k   y o u .**



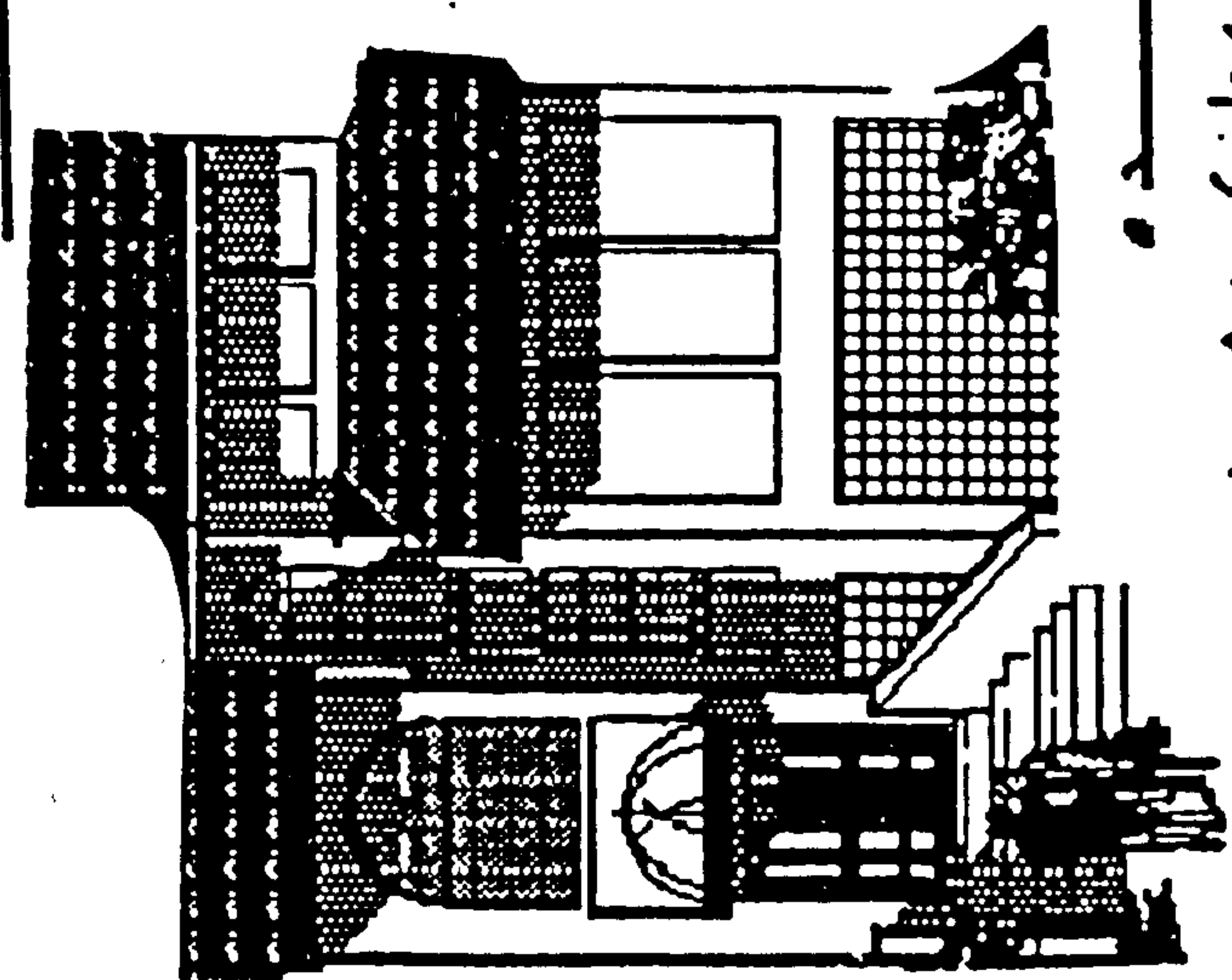
# **Appendix C**

## **The Arabic Questionnaire Format**

كلية الهندسة والعمارة الإسلامية  
جامعة أم القرى، ص. ب. ٥١٧  
مكة المكرمة - المملكة العربية السعودية



قسم التصميم المعماري  
جامعة شيبيلد  
شيبيلد - بريطانيا



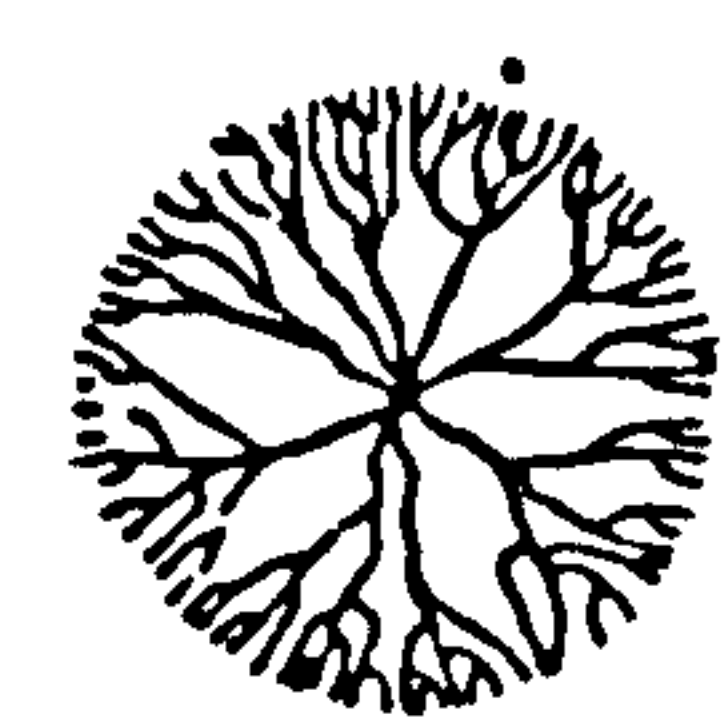
تمت إشراف كل من

الدكتور - مهدي المهدي احمد البس (جامعة أم القرى) و  
الدكتور - ايمان بروكسرتون (جامعة شيبيلد)

مسح استبياني في سد ينفة جـ جـ جـ  
موضوع البحث : تصميم وتخطيط المناطق الترفيهية على كورنيش جدة  
تحت ضوء الشريعة الإسلامية والمبادئ والتقاليد الهتبه

اسم الباحث : المهندس - طلال حسن محمد - عملي - حمادي

ماجستير و بكالوريوس في هندسة  
التصميم المعماري و عمارة البيئة



رجب ١٤٠٩ هـ - مارس ١٩٨٩ م

252



- ١٧- فحلا اشترى والى ذلك الفهمى حسب مايلي :
- 1- ( ) اقل من ٢٠٠٠ ريال سعودي
  - 2- ( ) من ٢٠٠١ - ٤٠٠٠ ريال سعودي
  - 3- ( ) من ٤٠٠١ - ٨٠٠٠ ريال سعودي
  - 4- ( ) من ٨٠٠١ - ١٢٠٠٠ ريال سعودي
  - 5- ( ) اكثر من ١٢٠٠٠ ريال سعودي
  - 6- ( ) ليس لدى دخل شهري خاص به

١٢- نوع وسيلة المواصلات المستخدمة في العطل لا لمرافق القرية :

- 1- ( ) سيارة خاصة
- 2- ( ) نقل عام ( تاكسي - حافلة - ليموزين - ... الخ )
- 3- ( ) سيارة مستأجرة ( من وكالات تأجير السيارات )
- 4- ( ) سيارة قريب او صديق
- 5- ( ) غير ذلك ..... فحلا حدد (.....) ( - )

١٤- مدة السهارة المستخدمة للاعراض القرية -- (.....) ( - )

١٥- مدة السهارة المستخدمة للتلذذ الفطرية وتلذذ العائلة (.....) ( - )

١٦- أي من الأشياء التالية توجد في المنزل : فحلا طبع دائره حول الرقم .

الوصف
10- امكان لتربية الدواجن
11- مجلس خاص للسمر
12- حديقة خاصة
13- مسبح
14- فناء

الوصف
1- مكتبة منزلية
2- صعد خاص لمطعم السكن
3- للزيتون
4- ليدينو
5- العلب الحديدية (الارني)
6- العلب للتعبئة
7- خادمة
8- مرصبة
9- فكه لمام المنزل

١٧- نوعية السكن الذي تقيم فيه حالياً ؟

- 1- ( ) قصر
- 2- ( ) فيلا
- 3- ( ) فيلا
- 4- ( ) منزل تقليدي قديم
- 5- ( ) طيف
- 6- ( ) آخر - اكرم
- 18- ملكية السكن :
  - 1- ( ) مستأجر
  - 2- ( ) سكن متزوج من جهة العمل
  - 3- ( ) ملك
  - 4- ( ) وقت
  - 5- ( ) آخر حدد

- ٨- العمر : -----
- 1- اقل من ١٥ سنة
  - 2- ( ) من ١٦ سنة الى ٢٥ سنة
  - 3- ( ) من ٢٦ سنة الى ٤٥ سنة
  - 4- ( ) من ٤٦ سنة الى ٥٥ سنة
  - 5- ( ) من ٥٦ سنة الى ٦٥ سنة
  - 6- ( ) اكثر من ٦٥ سنة

٩- من هو رئيس الأسرة؟-----

- 1- ( ) الأب
- 2- ( ) والد
- 3- ( ) البنت
- 4- ( ) الأم
- 5- ( ) الابن
- 6- ( ) آخر - حدد

- ١٠- المستوى التعليمي :
- 1- ( ) غير منظم
  - 2- ( ) يلرا فقط
  - 3- ( ) يلرا ويكتب
  - 4- ( ) شهادة ابتدائية
  - 5- ( ) شهادة متوسطة
  - 6- ( ) شهادة ثانوية
  - 7- ( ) كلية متوسطة
  - 8- ( ) شهادة جامعية
  - 9- ( ) اقل
  - 10- ( ) آخر... حدد .....

١١- اعمار و اجناس افراد العائلة المتواجدين في نفس المنزل ونوع النشاط القرية

نوع النشاط القرية لكل من هم	العدد	فئة العمر
	ذكر	اقل من سنوآت
	انثى	
	ذكر	من ١٥-٦٠ سنة
	انثى	
	ذكر	من ٦١-٧٥ سنة
	انثى	
	ذكر	من ٧٦-٨٠ سنة
	انثى	
	ذكر	من ٨١-٩٥ سنة
	انثى	
	ذكر	اكثر من ٩٥ سنة
	انثى	

- ٧ - ما مدى رضاكم عن خصوصية النساء استخدام الخصوصية للنساء ؟
- للاشطة القريةيه وطلوسهن في هذا الكان من الكورنيش ؟
- ١- ( ) قلبه جدا ( يوجد كشف من قبل الاجتب )
- 2- ( ) مرضيه الي حد ما
- 3- ( ) كثيره جدا ( محبوبيين وغير مكشوفين من قبل الجموعت الجاوره )
- 4- ( ) لا اعرف

٢- هل تعتقد ان هناك اسباب تحده او هنع النساء من استخدام السلعات والبرامجت القريةيه اللدوره على الكورنيش للانشاط والاستجماميه ؟

- 1- ( ) نعم 2- ( ) لا

٤- إذا كانت الإجابة بـ 'نعم' فملا اشرا الى اهم للاح اسباب تعتقد انها هنع النساء من مارسة الانشطة القريةيه :

- 1- ( ) لاسباب دينيه حيث ان المائله لا تعيب او ترتب في مارسة النشاط القريةيه في امكن مكشوف ( عدم توفر الخصوصية ) ( الخصوصية the privacy في عدم كشف العائله من قبل الاجتب وارتياحهم في استخدام النطقه القريةيه وامكن اللهبالباج )
- 2- ( ) مصلحه ومعاكسة الشباب للائله اثناء مرورهم واستخدمهم للخدمات القريةيه
- 3- ( ) لعدم توفر الصيكن الكامل للخدمات الوجوده
- 4- ( ) تقارب المسافات بين امكن البلبوس وعدم وجود موانق بصرية هنع الكشف على النساء.
- ٥- ( ) قرب حركة المرور والشله بدرجة مزيمه من امكن الموانل
- 6- ( ) لعدم وجود مراكز ترويحيه مكيله ومثلله
- 7- ( ) الحروب..... فضلا الكرفله.....

الهدف الثاني: معلومات عن الصبر والحدود المسكنيه

- ١- مقل على وانت مقيم في مده ؟ ..... ( مده السنوات )
- ٢- كيف تحصد الامكن القريةيه القريةيه محكم ؟

١- لئاله العلمه	منازه حيدو	رديكه	رديكه جدا	لا اعلم
2- طريقه الوصول اليها بالقدم				
3- حركة الشار في النطقه				
4- طريقه الوصول اليها بالواملات				
5- حركة المرور حول هذه الامكن				
6- للخصوصيه النساء				
7- التجميع على التعارف والتبضع لآخرين				
8- لاستيانه للموانل الناطقيه				
9- سلامه الاطفال				

- ٢- لمن تحظى الاولويه في تصميم الامكن القريةيه ؟ ( اختر اثنين مثلا )
- ١- ( ) الرجال 2- ( ) النساء 3- ( ) المولدين 4- ( ) الاطفال

الجزء الثالث: المشاطات والخدمات القريةيه والتصميم في محطقه الكورنيش

- ١- ما الموانل التي محدركم لعماء الوقت القريةيه في الكورنيش؟ ( مثلا إندار امه لمس موانل )
- 1- ( ) لشاهده البصر والتمتع بالنظر اللاح
- 2- ( ) لعدم وجود امكن ترويحيه منسبه للموانل في التي
- 3- ( ) الكان الوجوده المنسب نسبيا
- 4- ( ) سهون الوصول اليه
- 5- ( ) ارض وصلحات خاليه من اجل الاطفال والموانل
- 6- ( ) إصطد فرصه للنساء من اجل قضاء اوقات الفراغ
- 7- ( ) من اجل الاطفال ( الاتاب المامه واللمسه )
- 8- ( ) جمال النطقه الترويحيه بصلح عائله
- 9- ( ) الاتاب البصريه ( الصبله . صبه السمك . ركوب القوارب البصريه بالترجل... الخ )
- 10- ( ) امكن البلبوس المامه
- 11- ( ) التمول بالسياره على منطقه الكورنيش المنطقه
- 12- ( ) اشياه اخرى..... فضلا مده.....

- العناصر التالية يجب جدا في تصميم وتخطيط النطق الترويجي أو الكورنثس  
فصلا مع ملان الصغ (✓) على اهم خمسة عناصر تتركب تواجد في تطوير  
النطق الاستجمايبي :
- 1 - ( ) امكن مظله وساحات خضراء .
  - 2 - ( ) مناطق مطرود او حدائق جيدة مصممه ومنضمه للنباتات
  - 3 - ( ) مناطق لعب للاطفال
  - 4 - ( ) سهوله الوصول والولوج المناسب
  - 5 - ( ) سهوله ايجله مؤقث للسيارات قرب امكن عماره النشاط الترفيهي
  - 6 - ( ) توفير النصوصيه النامه للموائل وخاصة النساء
  - 7 - ( ) منح دخول وتطل المراب والندبول بسياراتهم حول المنطق الترويجي
  - 8 - ( ) المد من او تنظيم نفول الباعه والعاهم على الببع
  - 9 - ( ) تنظيم استخدام الامكن اللتروه
  - 10 - ( ) توفير النافع الترويجي التي تنسب كل فرد من افراد العائله
  - 11 - ( ) توفير الشعور بالامان والسلاسه من كل مايزوج الزوار  
(high shopping centers)
  - 12 - ( ) مراكز تسويق خليه (light shopping centers)
  - 13 - ( ) سببه او مصطى
  - 14 - ( ) حمامات (دورات مياه )
  - 15 - ( ) اخرى.....فضلا اكرما

- ٦- كيف نظم الاشياء التاليه حسب دائرها على شعورك بالرضا بالحسبه الى تصميم وتخطيط الكورنثس ؟
- ١- النصوصيات والكشف من الواجه الترفيهيه الباوره ( او الكشف عليكم من قبل المتلات او الافراد الذين يستخدمون الواجه الترويجيه اللربيه منكم )
- ١ - ( ) راضى جدا
- ٢ - ( ) راضى جدا
- ٣ - ( ) سببان
- ٤- الكشف عليكم من قبل الماره و السيارات الماره بجواركم
- ١ - ( ) راضى جدا
- ٢ - ( ) راضى
- ٣ - ( ) سببان

- ٤ - العاقر الباوره ( شكل الاشكال للمحسيه ، البسنتك البماليه ، السمر الاشماد ...الخ )
- ١ - ( ) راضى جدا
- ٢ - ( ) راضى
- ٣ - ( ) سببان

- ٥ - المساحه المنصم للجلوس الناء وجود وازدهام المكان بجموعات او افراد المبرين
- ١ - ( ) راضى جدا
- ٢ - ( ) راضى
- ٣ - ( ) سببان

- ٥ - الشعور بالامن والامان (سلامة الاطفال والنساء من الماره و حركة السيارات )
- ١ - ( ) راضى جدا
- ٢ - ( ) راضى
- ٣ - ( ) سببان

- ٧ - خلال جلوسكم في هذا الموقع كيف تجده الضوضاء ؟
- ١ - ( ) مشكله كبيره
- ٢ - ( ) مشكله متوسطه

- ٨ - لئلا المترم (بارا) مدا الولوج باللات ؟ ( فضلا اشر الى اهم للاك اسباب )
- ١ - ( ) جذاب جدا
- ٢ - ( ) منسب للاطفال
- ٣ - ( ) لقلوه من النطس اثنه البعث عن منطقه ترويجيه ٨- ( ) لبعده عن حركة المشه و السيارات
- ٤ - ( ) للربيه من شطلي، البحر
- ٥ - ( ) للربيه بجانب اللامى والالعاب المنصم

- ٩ - ماهي اللدمات والمشططات الترفيهيه التي تعتقد ان هذا المكان في امس الحاجه اليها ؟
- ١ - ( ) العاب بحريه ( قوارب ، ممتف بحري ، )
- ٢ - ( ) امكن للإستركاه مشجره ومزود بها جميع الراضق النامه
- ٣ - ( ) فواصل بين مناطق الرجال والنساء من اجل النصوصيه للموائل
- ٤ - ( ) خدمات ترفيهيه ( مراكز للاستجمام على البحر ، ملاهي ، .. الخ )
- ٥ - ( ) شاليهات خليه للموائل والحري للشباب بحيث توفير جميع الاحتمالات
- ٦ - ( ) اشياء اخرى ... فضلا اكرما.....

- ١٠- كيف ترتب مستوى او درجة خصوصية الحساب degree of privacy الخاص بـ  
المستخدمين او ماركسنتين للانشطة الترتيبية على وصف الكورتنيش بصفة عامة :  
١- ( ) قليلة جدا 3- ( ) كثيرة جدا  
2- ( ) معتدلة - ( ) لا اطم

- ١١- فغلا ما المدة التقريبية التي تخضونها لممارسة النشاط الترتيبى على الكورتنيش واولتها ؟  
١- ( ) اقل من ساعة ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصر ( ) مساء  
2- ( ) من ساعة الى ساعتين ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصر ( ) مساء  
3- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصر ( ) مساء  
4- ( ) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصر ( ) مساء  
5- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصر ( ) مساء  
6- ( ) طول اليوم

- ١٢- في اي ليام الاسبوع تملكون الفرص للحمل الوقت الترتيبى ؟  
١٢- المخر الى اهم العوامل التي تتعلق انها تؤدي الى | نصرانكم من الوق الترتيبى:

- ١- ( ) إهتمام الوقت المخصص للترتيب والترويج  
2- ( ) الشعور بالثقل والترتيب  
3- ( ) كثرة المعاسك والتعقيدات من قبل الشباب  
4- ( ) كثرة الناس والإزدحام بصفة عامة  
5- ( ) الكثف على النساء من قبل الجموعت الاخرى  
6- ( ) ونية في إيجاد مكان افضل  
7- ( ) للجدول بالسبارة على مناطق الكورتنيش الاخرى  
8- ( ) لسباب اخرى...فغلا اكثرما

- ١٤ - فغلا اكثر او إقذراحتات افكار إنتقادات حلول او وسائل تتعلق انها تساعد على  
تحسين و تطوير منظمة الكورتنيش البصرية .... و شكراً لكم.

# **Appendix D**

## **Copy of Selected Comments from the Questionnaire**



**TEXT BOUND INTO  
THE SPINE**



١٠ - كيف ترتب مستوى او درجة خصوصية النساء degree of privacy الجسد  
 جلوسهن او حارستهن للانشطة القرظيه على وصيف الكورنيتش بصله عامه :  
 ١- ( ) قليله جدا 3- ( ) كثيره جدا  
 ٢- ( ) متوسطه 4- ( ) لا اعلم

١١ - لعل ما المده القرظيه التي تخدمها لمارسة النشاط القرظي على الكورنيتش واولتها ؟  
 ١- ( ) اقل من ساعه  
 ٢- ( ) من ساعه الي ساعتين  
 ٣- ( ) من ثلاثه الي اربع ساعات  
 ٤- ( ) من خمس الي ست ساعات  
 ٥- ( ) اكثر من ست ساعات  
 ٦- ( ) طول اليوم  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا

١٢ - في اي ايام الاسبوع تخدمون الفروع لجلسه الوقت القرظي

١٣ - لعل الي اهم العوامل التي تعتمد انها تؤدي الي | تصراكم مع الواقع القرظي

- ١- ( ) انتهاء الوقت المخصص للقرظي والدرج
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالثقل والرتاب
- ٣- ( ) كثرة المناسك والضيافته من قبل الشبان
- ٤- ( ) كثرة الناس والازدحام بصفة عامه
- ٥- ( ) الكثف على النساء من قبل الجمهور الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبة في إيجاد مكان المفضل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالسياره على مناطق الكورنيتش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) اسباب اخرى - سألنا لكرمنا

١٤ - لعل اكثر اي الفعاليات الفكرية التي تقام في بلادنا او وسائل تعتمد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقتي الكورنيتش البحرية - و شكرا لكم.

من لا شك فيه انه منطقتي الكورنيتش بحرية  
 التي تليق

222

١٥ - لعل اكثر اي الفعاليات الفكرية التي تقام في بلادنا او وسائل تعتمد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقتي الكورنيتش البحرية - و شكرا لكم.

اقتراح: تكثيف الممارسات وحمل فعاليات للعائلات  
 وفتح الشباب العزاب من مضايقة بنات العائلات،  
 وذلك بسن قوانين خاصة للدخول الي منطقتي الكورنيتش

227

١٠ - كيف ترتب مستوى او درجة خصوصية النساء degree of privacy الجسد  
 جلوسهن او حارستهن للانشطة القرظيه على وصيف الكورنيتش بصله عامه :  
 ١- ( ) قليله جدا 3- ( ) كثيره جدا  
 ٢- ( ) متوسطه 4- ( ) لا اعلم

١١ - لعل ما المده القرظيه التي تخدمها لمارسة النشاط القرظي على الكورنيتش واولتها ؟  
 ١- ( ) اقل من ساعه  
 ٢- ( ) من ساعه الي ساعتين  
 ٣- ( ) من ثلاثه الي اربع ساعات  
 ٤- ( ) من خمس الي ست ساعات  
 ٥- ( ) اكثر من ست ساعات  
 ٦- ( ) طول اليوم  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا  
 ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) سدا

١٢ - في اي ايام الاسبوع تخدمون الفروع لجلسه الوقت القرظي

١٣ - لعل الي اهم العوامل التي تعتمد انها تؤدي الي | تصراكم مع الواقع القرظي

- ١- ( ) انتهاء الوقت المخصص للقرظي والدرج
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالثقل والرتاب
- ٣- ( ) كثرة المناسك والضيافته من قبل الشبان
- ٤- ( ) كثرة الناس والازدحام بصفة عامه
- ٥- ( ) الكثف على النساء من قبل الجمهور الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبة في إيجاد مكان المفضل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالسياره على مناطق الكورنيتش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) اسباب اخرى - سألنا لكرمنا

١٤ - لعل اكثر اي الفعاليات الفكرية التي تقام في بلادنا او وسائل تعتمد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقتي الكورنيتش البحرية - و شكرا لكم.

اذا اردنا ان نحسن او نطور منطقتي الكورنيتش  
 ونبين اننا نرغب في بقية الاحكام والاعمال  
 ان نركز في مجال ونتميز او نتفخر بالمال والجاه

المتقن لرحمة في مدينة جدة ولذا نرغب

اذا فردهم اننا من عليه لعدم وجود بديل عنه  
 غالبية السكان يفضلون هذه المنطقه الجيوية لجمال  
 التصميم والاشغال الجمالية بسبب والارصانه الجيدة  
 ولكن هناك ملاحظات

(١) الشباب - الشباب : وما يعانونه من  
 ومحاولة اخراجه بجموره استغرابية  
 او لتفحيط بجماره هذه الاماكن  
 حوز احد الاذنية لا تستطيع بان تلتصق الجرد  
 التخلص من الاضغاثات لدرية التي تحصل هناك

(٢) عدم وجود دورات المياه الخاصة  
 الهامة فالديه ليويد حسر انية حقا على  
 وهذا عجز كبير جدا في الخدمة وحكومتنا  
 لا تتصريح بسبل توفير لعدد الكافي رفح احاسه  
 لحو الكورنيتش وماعدا ذلك فكل شيء عال فعال دلتهم

حيث ان وجود شيء افرده علم يعرف دينية ويخاف الله (وصفا  
 الكلام يظنهم على الجنب) فانك له تجد صعوبة كبيرة في التوافق والمناج  
 على اي منشاء. ومن ولو كان هناك تفصيل في ايجاد ملامح  
 او كدمات لسانه للمناشاة لقرظيه. فنلذا بالنسبة للعوائل  
 فتجد ان النساء بانفسهم يحفظه ان لا يظن منهم اي شيء يلفت  
 نظر القرظيه. وكذلك ان ظهر شيء كان الاخر يجاي به فانه بغض  
 الطرمكولا يظن وكذلك على بالنسبة للعراب وكذلك لما جلت  
 عائله بجانب عائله اخرى لأسلوب اللامبالاه. ولذلك ترجع  
 ونقول يجب تربية الافراد وتوجيه على الاسلام واذا به في  
 كل مكان ويشعر بمراقبه لهم في كل مكان.  
 وفي انما ادعولهم انه يوفقك وان يساعدك ويساعد امثالا  
 على وضع تصاميم ومنشاء تناسب دينا وعاداتنا وان نفقت به  
 الجرى خلف افكار القرظي واخذها وتطبيقها في مجتمعنا على  
 هسه انهم ينفون اكثر منا اوان عقولهم اقل. وما اردت  
 هذا كله الذي التذكير نفس له انه يتفعا وينفك بما نفع في  
 دينا ودنيانا وأخرتنا بحم و سلام

لماذا لا يكون هناك اماكن خاصة بكل اجتماع  
للنساء او لعوائل . ولا يفضل للنساء فقط الاطعام او تناول  
الرجال والعزاي لهم اماكنه اجزاء بكل اجتماعا هكذا  
بالنسبة للعب اما يلعبه بال . اما اماكنه الجلوس فتقسم  
ببيت تكون كل جلس محالهم به تلاوة اطراف بنبات  
بسم (اي دنيا) فهذا البناء عندنا يقلم بغيره بل هو  
ما يشبه سور ويكون كشيء بيت لا يرى به خلال .



208

وهي الاشكال الجمالية يجب ان توضع بحيث يتم الاحداث  
الخاصة . فهي يجب ان لا تكون قلة لتجيد لنتيجة بل سهلا  
ان تستخدم كعازل طبيعي فيما بين الجلسات .

١٤ - لحلا اكثر ان الشراعات الفكرية انتقادات . حلول او وسائل تمنع انها تساهم على  
تصميم وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم  
التي قد تم اتمنى ان تكون هذه المشاريع التي تخدم التنمية  
الخاصة بالبحر ... و شكرا لكم  
العملية المنفصلة لهذه المشاريع من العمل الاكاديمي  
بكل هذه المناقشة التوضيحية . لا المتصفح يد خارج  
للتفاصيل المذكور . والله جاني فقط .

150 # Ot

١٤ - لحلا اكثر ان الشراعات الفكرية انتقادات . حلول او وسائل تمنع انها تساهم على

١- تصميم وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم  
٢- اقتراحات لتطوير الشوارع والمناطق  
٣- كفاءة واكتظاظ الكورنيش بملاعب المرحلي (خاصة سيرة ... و شكرا لكم)  
٤- المرحلي والمنزعات الخاصة ... والمعزولة للبحر غير محبذة لنتيجة (٧٥٪) لا تستغل لشيء  
٥- كفاءة وتنظيم برامج للتجديد بانواع تعطل اطل في اوقات وجود الشمس ... مما يزيد من الارتقاء التي يمكن الاستفادة منه الكورنيش بمرج  
٦- الكورنيش منطقة للتنشيط وعلم سياحي يجب الحد من السماح ببناء المباني العالية فيض والاشجار  
٧- كفاءة وتنظيم منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم

24 # Ot

- ١- كفاءة وتنظيم منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم
- ٢- اقتراحات لتطوير الشوارع والمناطق
- ٣- كفاءة واكتظاظ الكورنيش بملاعب المرحلي (خاصة سيرة ... و شكرا لكم)
- ٤- المرحلي والمنزعات الخاصة ... والمعزولة للبحر غير محبذة لنتيجة (٧٥٪) لا تستغل لشيء
- ٥- كفاءة وتنظيم برامج للتجديد بانواع تعطل اطل في اوقات وجود الشمس ... مما يزيد من الارتقاء التي يمكن الاستفادة منه الكورنيش بمرج
- ٦- الكورنيش منطقة للتنشيط وعلم سياحي يجب الحد من السماح ببناء المباني العالية فيض والاشجار
- ٧- كفاءة وتنظيم منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم

١٤ - لحلا اكثر ان الشراعات الفكرية انتقادات . حلول او وسائل تمنع انها تساهم على  
تصميم وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم

١- كفاءة وتنظيم منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم  
٢- اقتراحات لتطوير الشوارع والمناطق  
٣- كفاءة واكتظاظ الكورنيش بملاعب المرحلي (خاصة سيرة ... و شكرا لكم)  
٤- المرحلي والمنزعات الخاصة ... والمعزولة للبحر غير محبذة لنتيجة (٧٥٪) لا تستغل لشيء  
٥- كفاءة وتنظيم برامج للتجديد بانواع تعطل اطل في اوقات وجود الشمس ... مما يزيد من الارتقاء التي يمكن الاستفادة منه الكورنيش بمرج  
٦- الكورنيش منطقة للتنشيط وعلم سياحي يجب الحد من السماح ببناء المباني العالية فيض والاشجار  
٧- كفاءة وتنظيم منطقة الكورنيش البحرية ... و شكرا لكم

30/3/89  
57 # Ot

151 # Ot

١١ - فضل ما العه القريبه التي تفضونها لممارسة النشاط الترفيهي على الكورنيش واولتها ؟

- ١- ( ) الل من ساعه
- ٢- ( ) من ساعه الى ساعتين
- ٣- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات
- ٤- (X) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات
- ٥- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات
- ٦- ( ) طول اليوم

### الجواب الصحيح

١٢- في اي ايام الاسبوع تفضلون الخروج لفضاء الوقت الترفيهي

١٣- اشر الى اهم العوامل التي تعتقد انها تؤدي الى نصرتكم من الترفيهي

- ١- ( ) إنهاء الوقت النصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- (X) كثرة المعاسك والضغوطات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- (X) كثرة الخس والارحام بصفة عامه
- ٥- (X) الكشفت على النساء من قبل الجمومات الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبة في إيجاد مكان الختل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالسياره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) اسباب اخرى ... فضلنا انكرها

### الجواب الصحيح

١٤ - فضلنا اكثر اي اقتراحات المكار إنتقادات حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه ... و شكرا لكم.

- ١- ~~الرائحة العامه وخصضا النساء~~
- ٢- ~~طابع مشرق او كبريات تحت اشراق البلاستيك كدمه زفانتز~~
- ٣- ~~والضياء على جميع البائقيه المتجوليه وخصوصا بانفس (ايس الكريم)~~
- ٤- ~~عدم استعمال ادوات البنيه للسيارات~~
- ٥- ~~انه يتحقق فعلا مشرق جديد وليس على الورق~~

١٠ - كيف ترتب مستوى او درجة خصوصيه الحياء of privacy جلوسهم او حارسهم لانشطه الترفيهيه على وصيف الكورنيش بصله عامه  
١- ( ) قليله جدا ٣- ( ) كثيره جدا  
٢- ( ) متوازنه ٤- ( ) لا اعلم

١١ - فضل ما العه القريبه التي تفضونها لممارسة النشاط الترفيهي على الكورنيش

- ١- ( ) الل من ساعه
- ٢- ( ) من ساعه الى ساعتين
- ٣- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات
- ٤- ( ) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات
- ٥- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات
- ٦- ( ) طول اليوم

١٢- في اي ايام الاسبوع تفضلون الخروج لفضاء الوقت الترفيهي

١٣- اشر الى اهم العوامل التي تعتقد انها تؤدي الى نصرتكم من ال

- ١- ( ) إنهاء الوقت النصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- (X) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- ( ) كثرة المعاسك والضغوطات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- (X) كثرة الخس والارحام بصفة عامه
- ٥- (X) الكشفت على النساء من قبل الجمومات الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبة في إيجاد مكان الختل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالسياره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) اسباب اخرى ... فضلنا انكرها

١٤ - فضلنا اكثر اي اقتراحات المكار إنتقادات حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه ... و شكرا لكم.

٩ - ماكرة خصصه للمناسبات - كدمه دفول بسبب الزاب اليه  
توزيع اماكهم خاصه للخصم للمناسبات فماتهم بترتيبهم  
ايضا صه بهم  
الخجاد اماكهم بترتيبهم اي صه شل بجزء الضارة طامير من مقلاد يسود بصميم واستمراف احوال الناس تقرب وجه صوره

- ٢- ( ) من ساعه الى ساعتين
- ٣- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات
- ٤- ( ) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات
- ٥- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات
- ٦- ( ) طول اليوم

١٢- في اي ايام الاسبوع تفضلون الخروج لفضاء الوقت الترفيهي

١٣- اشر الى اهم العوامل التي تعتقد انها تؤدي الى نصرتكم من الترفيهي

- ١- ( ) إنهاء الوقت النصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- (X) كثرة المعاسك والضغوطات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- (X) كثرة الخس والارحام بصفة عامه
- ٥- (X) الكشفت على النساء من قبل الجمومات الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبة في إيجاد مكان الختل
- ٧- (X) للتجول بالسياره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) اسباب اخرى ... فضلنا انكرها

١٤ - فضلنا اكثر اي اقتراحات المكار إنتقادات حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه ... و شكرا لكم.

- ١- ( ) إنهاء الوقت النصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- (X) كثرة المعاسك والضغوطات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- (X) كثرة الخس والارحام بصفة عامه
- ٥- (X) الكشفت على النساء من قبل الجمومات الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبة في إيجاد مكان الختل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالسياره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) اسباب اخرى ... فضلنا انكرها

١١٨

١٤ - فضلنا اكثر اي اقتراحات المكار إنتقادات حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على تحسين وتطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه ... و شكرا لكم.

٩ - ~~الرائحة العامه وخصضا النساء~~  
~~طابع مشرق او كبريات تحت اشراق البلاستيك كدمه زفانتز~~  
~~والضياء على جميع البائقيه المتجوليه وخصوصا بانفس (ايس الكريم)~~  
~~عدم استعمال ادوات البنيه للسيارات~~  
~~انه يتحقق فعلا مشرق جديد وليس على الورق~~

5/9/89  
٣٧

١٠ - كيف ترتب مستوى أو درجة خصوصية الحساب degree of privacy الخاص بـ  
جولسون أو مارتنسون للأنشطة الترفيهية على وصف الكورنيش بصفته عامه :  
١- ( ) قليل جدا 3- ( ) كثير جدا  
٢- ( ) متفرد ( ) 4- ( ) لا أعلم

١١ - تحللا ما المعه الفلوربييه التي تلخونها لممارسة النشاط الترفيهي على الكورنيش واولتها ؟  
١- ( ) الل من ساعه ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٢- ( ) من ساعه الى ساعين ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٣- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٤- ( ) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٥- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٦- ( ) طول اليوم

١٢- في اي ايام الاسبوع تلخون الفروع للخله الوقت الترفيهي اوقات الدراسة بحيث لاتتاو

١٣- افسر الى اهم العوامل التي تعتقد انها تؤدي الى [تصرفكم من الموقع الترفيهي:

- ١- ( ) إنتهاء الوقت المخصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- ( ) كثرة المعاسك والخطبات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- ( ) كثرة الناس والأزدحام بصفه عامه
- ٥- ( ) الكلفه على النساء من قبل الجموعه الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبه في إيجاد مكان افضل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالمساره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) أسباب اخرى - تحللا لكم

١٤ - تحللا أكثر ان إقترحات أفكار إنقذاده حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على  
تمسيح و تطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه - و شكرا لكم.

٩ يجب تطبيق قواعد الشريعة الاسلاميه لتعظيم منطه  
الكورنيش ثم الرديف كما أريد في السبأ المتكلمين  
من قبل لجنة خاصه مكلفه بذلك  
مع أهمية جانب توفير الخصوصية للنساء و اولاده اعلم

10

١٠ - كيف ترتب مستوى أو درجة خصوصية الحساب degree of privacy الخاص بـ  
جولسون أو مارتنسون للأنشطة الترفيهية على وصف الكورنيش بصفته عامه :  
١- ( ) قليل جدا 3- ( ) كثير جدا  
٢- ( ) متفرد ( ) 4- ( ) لا أعلم

١١ - تحللا ما المعه الفلوربييه التي تلخونها لممارسة النشاط الترفيهي على الكورنيش واولتها ؟  
١- ( ) الل من ساعه ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٢- ( ) من ساعه الى ساعين ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٣- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٤- ( ) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٥- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٦- ( ) طول اليوم

١٢- في اي ايام الاسبوع تلخون الفروع للخله الوقت الترفيهي انا الزيارات

١٣- افسر الى اهم العوامل التي تعتقد انها تؤدي الى [تصرفكم من الموقع الترفيهي:

- ١- ( ) إنتهاء الوقت المخصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- ( ) كثرة المعاسك والخطبات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- ( ) كثرة الناس والأزدحام بصفه عامه
- ٥- ( ) الكلفه على النساء من قبل الجموعه الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبه في إيجاد مكان افضل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالمساره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) أسباب اخرى - تحللا لكم

١٤ - تحللا أكثر ان إقترحات أفكار إنقذاده حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على  
تمسيح و تطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه - و شكرا لكم.  
تعزيز النظافه النظافه التي لا يوجد من اكليل و العود (المنزل)  
وتحذير عمن يترددون في جميع مناطق الكورنيش (تفتيش وقتها)  
تتمتع و مع الإعتناء في جميع مناطق الكورنيش

١٠ - كيف ترتب مستوى أو درجة خصوصية الحساب degree of privacy الخاص بـ  
جولسون أو مارتنسون للأنشطة الترفيهية على وصف الكورنيش بصفته عامه :  
١- ( ) قليل جدا 3- ( ) كثير جدا  
٢- ( ) متفرد ( ) 4- ( ) لا أعلم

١١ - تحللا ما المعه الفلوربييه التي تلخونها لممارسة النشاط الترفيهي على الكورنيش واولتها ؟  
١- ( ) الل من ساعه ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٢- ( ) من ساعه الى ساعين ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٣- ( ) من ثلاثة الى اربع ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٤- ( ) من خمسة الى ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٥- ( ) اكثر من ستة ساعات ( ) صباحا ( ) ظهرا ( ) عصرا ( ) مساء  
٦- ( ) طول اليوم

١٢- في اي ايام الاسبوع تلخون الفروع للخله الوقت الترفيهي المنصب

١٣- افسر الى اهم العوامل التي تعتقد انها تؤدي الى [تصرفكم من الموقع الترفيهي:

- ١- ( ) إنتهاء الوقت المخصص للترفيه والترويح
- ٢- ( ) الشعور بالملل والرتابه
- ٣- ( ) كثرة المعاسك والخطبات من قبل الشباب
- ٤- ( ) كثرة الناس والأزدحام بصفه عامه
- ٥- ( ) الكلفه على النساء من قبل الجموعه الاخرى
- ٦- ( ) رغبه في إيجاد مكان افضل
- ٧- ( ) للتجول بالمساره على مناطق الكورنيش الاخرى
- ٨- ( ) أسباب اخرى - تحللا لكم

١٤ - تحللا أكثر ان إقترحات أفكار إنقذاده حلول او وسائل تعتقد انها تساعد على  
تمسيح و تطوير منطقة الكورنيش البصريه - و شكرا لكم.

٩ الحد من رتبه الحجاب كونه حجابا عموما لا حجابا  
الحد من رتبه الحجاب كونه حجابا عموما لا حجابا  
الحد من رتبه الحجاب كونه حجابا عموما لا حجابا

151

٩ الحد من رتبه الحجاب كونه حجابا عموما لا حجابا  
الحد من رتبه الحجاب كونه حجابا عموما لا حجابا  
الحد من رتبه الحجاب كونه حجابا عموما لا حجابا